

# **Secrets of Enlightenment**

Bishop Jim Humble

## Copyright Notice

**Author: Bishop James V. Humble  
(Jim Humble)**

Copyright © 2011 Bishop James V. Humble. Quotations up to one full chapter may be used when the Author is given credit. Other copies, even full copies, may be used under certain conditions. Please contact the Author for further information.

**Possible Cancellation of Copyright:** In the event of the death of the Author for any reason, or the detention of the Author for any reason for more than 60 days during any 6-month period, or if the Author is missing for a period of more than 60 days after being reported as missing to a police station in the State of Nevada, the Copyright 2011 by the Author, Bishop James V. Humble (Jim Humble), is cancelled and this book becomes public domain.

In addition, the Author grants permission to any person, or group, or entity to distribute this book free or for profit throughout the world should any of the conditions mentioned in the above paragraph come about. The Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing also has complete rights to sell or distribute this book for free anywhere in the world. This is stated here to prevent possible misunderstanding.

The Author's email address is jim@jimhumble.com. Only emails with the subject of "Secrets of Enlightenment" will get past the server's spam filter. You will receive an automatic response. Follow the instructions in the response to finally communicate with Jim.

Please suggest this book to your friends. There is a simple automatic service that you can use to send information concerning this book to your friends. Go to [www.miraclemineal.org](http://www.miraclemineal.org) and click on the "Tell friends" button.

ISBN 13-978-0-9824712-6-5

ISBN 10-0-9824712-6-2

# Table of Contents

**FOREWORD            V**

|            |  |            |
|------------|--|------------|
| <b>1.</b>  | <b>BELIEFS</b>   | <b>1</b>   |
| <b>2.</b>  | <b>THE CONTINUED BRUTALITY</b>                         | <b>9</b>   |
| <b>3.</b>  | <b>THE CONDITION OF EXISTENCE</b>                      | <b>15</b>  |
| <b>4.</b>  | <b>THE SECRET REASON FOR CREATION</b>                  | <b>22</b>  |
| <b>5.</b>  | <b>THE SECRET NAME OF THE UNIVERSE</b>                 | <b>26</b>  |
| <b>6.</b>  | <b>THE PURPOSE OF DRAMA</b>                            | <b>31</b>  |
| <b>7.</b>  | <b>THE FIRST LIE</b>                                   | <b>35</b>  |
| <b>8.</b>  | <b>THE SECOND LIE</b>                                  | <b>38</b>  |
| <b>9.</b>  | <b>HOW ARE THINGS GOING?</b>                           | <b>43</b>  |
| <b>10.</b> | <b>ABOUT THERAPIES</b>                                 | <b>46</b>  |
| <b>11.</b> | <b>FALSE REWARDS</b>                                   | <b>52</b>  |
| <b>12.</b> | <b>WHO THE PLAYERS ARE</b>                             | <b>59</b>  |
| <b>13.</b> | <b>THE PAWNS AND PIECES</b>                            | <b>64</b>  |
| <b>14.</b> | <b>THE GREATEST SECRET</b>                             | <b>73</b>  |
| <b>15.</b> | <b>LOVE</b>  | <b>85</b>  |
| <b>16.</b> | <b>ENLIGHTENMENT AND THE BEGINNING OF THE UNIVERSE</b> | <b>92</b>  |
| <b>17.</b> | <b>PRACTICAL ENLIGHTENMENT</b>                         | <b>124</b> |
| <b>18.</b> | <b>WHO OR WHAT IS EVOLVING?</b>                        | <b>127</b> |
| <b>19.</b> | <b>ACCEPTANCE AND HEALING</b>                          | <b>134</b> |
| <b>20.</b> | <b>FREE WILL</b>                                       | <b>150</b> |
| <b>21.</b> | <b>WORLD PEACE</b>                                     | <b>153</b> |
| <b>22.</b> | <b>WHY DOES GOD ALLOW SUFFERING?</b>                   | <b>188</b> |
| <b>23.</b> | <b>EVIL</b>  | <b>192</b> |
| <b>24.</b> | <b>THE FINAL SECRET</b>                                | <b>194</b> |
| <b>25.</b> | <b>TAKE BACK YOUR POWER</b>                            | <b>199</b> |
| <b>26.</b> | <b>MMS</b>   | <b>208</b> |

- 27. THE TRUTH SHALL SET YOU FREE 213
- 28. RELIGIONS: THE FALSE GAMES 225



## Foreword

Depending upon your state of beingness, there may be things in this book that you will not want to learn. Like any book, it contains ideas that you may disagree with, but more than that, you may find ideas that you violently disagree with, but cannot find a logical argument against. In other words, I am talking about things that you really don't want to know—what might be an information overload.

In this kind of situation, you may walk around for months or years worrying about something that you cannot respond to logically. It would have been better for you to watch TV or play a game on your computer than spend time reading this book. However, not many people who will have this kind of trouble will have picked up this book in the first place. The problem is, I know that there will be such people writing me and it will have been best for us both that they just passed by this book with a shrug.

This book is definitely not written for the purpose of making money. However, any money made will be used for furthering the purpose of the Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing and that purpose is a world without disease. This is not a religious goal but a survival goal for mankind.

If I had my choice and could pick my readers, I would pick those who have been keenly interested in enlightenment but have been too busy to get around to searching it out. They might even be feeling a little guilty because they haven't had time to learn more about it, but life has been too hectic or too busy, or too much fun to take the time. In other words, they have been very active people.

I didn't say that strongly enough, I mean that they have really, really been active people. In that case, they won't have been buying into most of the things that present day people are buying into, such as:

- modern medicine;
- changing the Constitution;
- creating a one-world government;
- all present-day politics;
- global warming or climate change; and, of course,
- the idea that government will bring us freedom.

In this case, I think that these particular people are ready for the ideas in this book; that they mostly already have them in mind and just need the alignment given in this book to make it enlightenment. If not, they will see the logic immediately and will not need much further convincing.

It is these people that humanity depends on to be saved from its own brutality. Mankind needs these people desperately. They have the ability to understand and to put things into action. They will not be a part of the super-rich, as anyone who has become super-rich has done so in the face of children dying of disease and starvation, starvation of the masses, poverty, and a host of other brutalities and un-met human needs. The super-rich will not be helping us to create a world without disease.

I have already verified this by approaching various super-rich groups and individuals. They will not help. Face it, there is enough money, food, and materials for all of mankind to live decently right now, but a few families have amassed most of it and they keep it hidden away. If they had gotten it legitimately, that would be one thing, but they didn't; they stole it.

- If you are religious, you will not appreciate my handling of love and I don't think you will want to read the book.

Of course, I am not against love. I believe it is wonderful. However, in some of the oldest written records of mankind, more than 2000 years old, it is said that love will save mankind and is the answer to mankind's brutality. Love has been around

for all that time, but guess what? Love has not saved us. Down through the thousands of years, teacher after teacher has expounded on the wonders of love and they have taught that love is the answer to most everything. Jesus taught the same thing 2000 years ago, but love has not saved us.

The story of the Christian religion has been one of murder, slaughter, and war, and today that continues in many parts of the world. This teaching has just been one more way of making people feel guilty for not using love to bring about our salvation.

Wait, don't throw this book away; give it to someone.

Finally, there are things in this book that are mentioned more than once. Sorry, it is my mode of writing. Sometimes it is necessary to make a point. More than 30 books and I have never gotten a single letter from a reader complaining about it, but editors really hate it, so I just have to go against them in this concept. That is, sometimes one must mention a concept or idea more than once in a book.

Jim Humble



## 1. Beliefs

There is an area in which mankind has been deceived for millennia and that is the area of enlightenment. At this point and for this writing, I would like to differentiate between enlightenment that has been taught for millennia and real enlightenment that could be in this society. Let me call the new enlightenment “Practical Enlightenment” until a better name comes along, and call the old enlightenment, that which all the holy men worked so hard for, just “Enlightenment.” What really is Practical Enlightenment? Can you get it and how hard is it to obtain?

### Two Things About Practical Enlightenment

1. Practical Enlightenment comes from knowledge of the truth.
2. There is a difference between proven knowledge (truth) and beliefs.

Again, for millennia, there has been little or no understanding of the difference between these two things. Down through the ages, people have believed that there is no difference between truth and beliefs. This one concept, misunderstood by humanity for millennia, has prevented us from progressing spiritually into this modern age.

You will probably say at this point, “Well, I know the difference between proven knowledge and beliefs, and most of the people I know, know it too.” In that case, let me ask you:

- Why is there more than one religion on Earth and more than one philosophy?”

Why indeed? Well, it’s because each person is convinced that his belief is truth. Practical Enlightenment is useful while normal enlightenment down through the ages has never even approached usefulness. It has been used mostly to impress people.

Religions and philosophies have not improved because people have been sure that their beliefs are truth. As long as a person is sure that his belief is truth, he will not seek further knowledge in that area. The believers of all religions have never allowed for the tiniest possibility that their beliefs might not be correct. One reason is that it has always been felt that to admit the possibility of being wrong about one's belief would be the maximum insult to their God. To admit even the slightest possibility that their belief might not be truth means that they really are not believers. This total inflexibility of belief has resulted in untold millions of people being killed.

The killing has resulted from the inability of each religion's believers to admit the possibility of being wrong—that is, admit the possibility that their beliefs are not total truth. Thus the various religions have been willing to kill, since they are certain that there is no possibility of them being wrong. In this modern age, that fact has still not changed.

Unfortunately, the belief that one's beliefs are truth has extended into almost every other area of life. The differences between Republicans and Democrats is one example, with each side certain that their beliefs are true and usually neither side wanting to be confused with the facts. The total belief in modern medicine kills millions each year because modern medicine has no cures for most of humanity's diseases, although these cures do exist elsewhere. Millions get fatter like pigs because of the belief that a low fat, high carbohydrate diet prevents heart disease and obesity.

Go into any ghetto in the US or the world and talk to any gang member. You will find many beliefs that have not been questioned because the gang members know their beliefs are the truth. Yet those beliefs are what cause the killing and crime, and maintain the poverty conditions found there. It is a fact of faulty logic, making logical thinking impossible in those who have learned this other mode of thinking, which, unfortunately, is the vast majority of mankind.

The likelihood that people will ever learn to think correctly in the area of beliefs is very low since children are taught from their earliest moments that beliefs are the truth. If a child anywhere in this world is not taught anything else, he is taught that beliefs are truth, that what his parents believe is the truth. They are taught that, since beliefs are truth, there is no point in questioning them.

For example, a child is taught that there is a God who sits on a throne somewhere, and a great many ideas about this God is fed to the child as truth. There is no proof either way that it is truth, not even one tiny scrap of proof. Yet most humans assume it is. It's a point of faulty logic that cannot be unlearned. And even though it may be true, as long as a person does not admit that there is no proof, he cannot think logically in this area, and that spreads to most other areas in his life. Maybe there are a few rare adults who can unlearn this style of thinking, but the vast majority cannot admit that their beliefs might not be the truth. This is, unfortunately, only one of the reasons mankind cannot think logically.



### **The Truth Paragraph**

What is the opposite of belief? Well, that isn't hard to understand. The opposite of belief is that which can be proven practically. The rules in a court of law are good enough. If you can prove it with logical data, or truthful witnesses, or just logic, and it works, that should be enough to call it truth. We don't have to go on and on about truth *ad nauseam*.

### **Searching for Truth**

So, on the question of enlightenment, you may have to give up your most treasured belief and look for the real truth in things. If you are truly looking for Practical Enlightenment, you can do this. You are tired of all the promises of ascending into heaven, or traveling around without your body, or moving objects with your mind, or overcoming all your cares, or being able to heal

yourself, and so on. You have noticed that despite all the technologies, no one has ascended to heaven or become a God. You have noticed that there are still about 50 wars going on in the world, and that doesn't seem to change a lot.

One of the fondest beliefs of New Age people, of many people in general, and within Christianity, is how much better people are becoming as time passes. Maybe you have been in these groups and still have beliefs in this area. Maybe you believe that the clearing technologies, or other philosophies or religions are going to make us all wonderful or even gods of some kind.

In that case, since you are looking for real enlightenment, you must look at these beliefs and apply The Truth Paragraph to them (see previous page). For example, Christians are sure that their belief in God makes them much better people, but would the evidence brought to a court of law prove this?

My family was totally into Christianity, and, when I was a child, their pastor ran off with the church's money—twice. You never saw so many people sleeping with people other than their spouses as those in our church, and I was in many churches in many Christian areas. It would be a little troublesome to try to prove that Christians are really better than people of other religions or of other philosophies.

Another very fond belief of many New Age people is the idea that what you believe is what is going to happen. In other words, if you believe you are going to get cancer, then you will get cancer. If you believe that you are going to be rich, then you will be rich, and so on. But this is simply another form of believing that what you believe is the truth. Just because you believe it does not make it the truth, and just because you believe something will happen does not make it happen. Maybe a few people will believe that they will be dead tomorrow, but the vast majority of those who will be dead will have believed that they would go on living.

In Hiroshima, Japan, in 1945, 20,000 people believed that they would eat dinner that evening, but they didn't; they were all dead that evening. There were many people who believed that

Hitler was a good man, but that did not make him a good man. Many people believed that communism was good and would make the world a better place, but that did not happen. In fact over a period of 70 years, more than 110 million people were murdered because some men believed that communism would work.

A belief is only effective to the point that it **causes you to act**. Beliefs can be very important and cause many things, but they affect you only to the extent that you act upon them. You cannot create by believing. You must create in this universe by some sort of action. Thinking comes first, but action must be involved before something is created in this universe. “Think and Grow Rich” is not possible unless you act. You cannot “believe” yourself into being rich, no matter how fond New Age people are of this idea. You can believe to the point where you do things to make yourself rich, but then it is the actions that make you rich. It is important to believe in your goal, but the belief alone will not achieve it. You must act. This should be obvious. You should be able to look at the logic and prove it to yourself from your present knowledge.

The New Age people and many others believe in manifesting things they want or need. I knew a person who spent her whole life trying to manifest the things she needed, but it only worked one time. I know dozens if not hundreds of people right now who believe that they should manifest the things of their life. It is the same as trying to believe themselves into wealth. The game is one of exchange with the universe. You get things by exchanging with the universe. With people, you must exchange value for value. For example, if you work a certain number of hours, the exchange is a certain amount of money. Manifesting is the attempt to get something for nothing. It can happen once, but then the universe goes out of balance with you and it doesn't happen again.

It was evidently God's idea that, in this universe, he would create through his viewpoints only through actions, because that's the way it works. When using The Truth Paragraph, even when people testify about how much better they are after

clearing procedures, I have not been able to prove that these procedures produce any better results than standard psychology, or any number of other mental technologies.

During many years in a certain church (I can't give the name, as they attack people who do), I read thousands of testimonies of success stories written by people who had been improved by this church's therapy. But for 17 years I also listened to hundreds of testimonies of people who had been improved by being born again in various Christian churches. With either this Church or the Christian religion, I saw very few results that could be proven as better than results from standard psychology by using The Truth Paragraph above. I've noticed that they all work pretty nearly the same way. Maybe there are very slightly more positive results from being born again than there are, for example, from clearing procedures, but not much. The reason is that religions open the door for deluding yourself more than other mental technologies do.

Modern psychology gets more results than anything else. The point is that if you are reading this book, you are still looking for Practical Enlightenment, and if you find it here in these pages or anywhere else, it will be because you decided to actually look. It will be because you have realized that your beliefs are not necessarily the absolute truth, and thus you can look further.

### **Please Evaluate These Pages**

The following chapters cover mostly logic and your own knowledge (things you know to be true, rather than believe to be true). If you have succeeded in allowing yourself to question your beliefs, rather than continuing to hold on to them as truth, there may be some truth here for you.

You may find that the game of life, once explained, is a lot more fun when you know what it is. You may find that you have reached enlightenment far beyond clearing, far beyond going to India and studying for 40 years in some ashram. Then, when you arrive in India and meet the holy men and women, you can really evaluate their situation. You can look them in the eye and

know exactly what their game is and be glad for them—or not—as you see fit. But you will never again think that they have something that you lack. It will be the opposite: you will have something that it isn't likely they will have for many lifetimes. However, always remember it is up to you to evaluate the ideas given here and know for yourself if it is the truth for you.

This does not mean that you should not learn more or that you could not benefit from some kind of therapy. On the other hand, you will never need to teach yourself lessons, or learn lessons of life other than just living life, or do anything in any of the religions, philosophies, or teachings of wise men for your immortal soul or anything like that. You can play any one of them or none of them. You will be able to play a real game instead of one of the false games.

If you bother to understand the information in this book, you will become more and more enlightened as time passes and as you dwell on what—for you—is the truth. You will not need to go anywhere else for your enlightenment; rather, you will want to get on with the game of life. You will go for the fun in it all, and the fun will be in the drama that you create. We will cover this point very carefully later. Understanding and truth always lie within you.

Always remember that anything you believe may or may not be the truth. If you can prove it in a court of law, with logic, witnesses, and scientific data, then you will know for a fact that it is the truth. But even then, a really careful player will always leave an opening for further truth. If you are like many searchers, you might have started off this lifetime with religion when you were a child. After a few years it didn't seem to make much sense, and religious people seemed no better or worse than the rest, so you tried something else. You might have become a hippy and walked around with a sign on your chest saying, "Ascension or bust."

Then, if you were really into it, you might have traveled to India and talked to holy men and yogis about going into the light, or some such thing. You may have spent 20 or 30 years in one

philosophy or another studying and planning on going to the next plane of existence. Here in these pages you may find knowledge that for you supersedes them all. I can't guarantee it, but it may happen. Please read on.

### **The First Step Toward Practical Enlightenment**

The first step must be an understanding that one's beliefs might not necessarily be the truth. Although all of mankind will mouth the conviction that they understand the difference between beliefs and truth, thousands of people continue to die every day because men continue to believe that their beliefs are the truth. Only the truth will set you free, and that just might not be what men believe is the truth at this time.

If what people believe at this time is true, then we would all be free. There would be no sickness, or war, or starvation, or even third world countries, since the true answers to all of these problems are already available here on Earth, now. Only beliefs prevent them from being used.

- The greatest evil of all comes from this one faulty point in logic: the belief that one's beliefs are true.

The millions upon millions of murders and deaths by torture would never have happened if people had questioned their own beliefs.

There are other evils, such as the evil that men do out of greed, but they never equal the evil done for beliefs. In the final analysis, a practical understanding of God will be the only thing that will save humanity. Without that understanding, mankind on Earth will finally cease to exist. A practical and logical understanding of God does not now exist except in a small few.



## 2. The Continued Brutality

I have always liked to believe that I am a spiritual person. After all, I like to help people. I like to see that people have the necessities of life, and I feel an even deeper desire to see that people have a way of overcoming fear and pain. There have been times when people helped me, and it seems only fair that I return the favor whenever I can. So that's sort of the beginning of a humanitarian effort, is it not? And then I read some books on spirituality, or at least what I thought was spirituality. I realized that either I don't understand what spirituality is or a whole lot of other people don't.

### **A Preliminary Discussion of God**

In a discussion of spirituality, the subject of God almost always comes up. So let me say a little bit along that line, as it has much to do with spirituality. Many believe that God and/or the spirit of man existed before the universe was here. That seems reasonable if you are going to consider that God made the universe, but the concepts discussed here are going to be a great deal different from those of the religions. Those will be discussed more later in this book, but right now I want to look at a different aspect of God.

According to Einstein and a lot of other scientists, the four basic building blocks of this universe are

- Space,
- Time,
- Energy, and
- Matter.

Let's refer to these as STEM for short.

If God made these things, obviously God is not made of his own creations. He is not made of the things of this universe. Scientifically speaking, you must say that in terms of this universe, God is made of nothing, and that means God is

nothing. Well, that's the apparent logic of it, but obviously not the whole of it. Remember, considering STEM, God cannot be made of energy, matter, or time, and thus does not take up space. He existed before these things were made. So one must consider that God cannot be explained or defined, or even understood in terms of this universe, which again, is space, time, energy, and matter. One can only get a glimpse of God in terms of what he is not. And he is not these things.

God is not made of energy, but we consider that he has control over energy. God is not made of matter, yet we consider that he has control of matter. Since we consider that God has control of time, then God must be situated in time where he considers that he is situated or where he wants to be situated. The same must be true of space: he must be situated in space wherever he considers himself to be situated or wants to be situated. In that case, we may assume that he could be anywhere or everywhere, as he does not take up space. Most people who believe in a God also believe that he has infinite capabilities and thus if we do believe in God, we must assume he has control of all these things.

Of course, if you don't believe in God, then you probably don't believe any of this. However, don't stop reading now; there is something here that may surprise you.

### **Religious Groups and Responsibility**

The group that talks about taking responsibility the most is the religious. Preachers doing sermons on Sundays talk about it all the time. In a war-torn world, many of the leaders and teachers know that we, mankind, must take responsibility for the condition that exists, for mankind's brutality. That has been known for centuries, but it never happens.

- We do not take responsibility for our brutality.

There is a reason for that.

All through the centuries, religions have been used to keep people from ever taking responsibility for themselves. For many millennia, religions have convinced us that we are created by a

God who has a plan. This concept is known in many polytheistic religions over the thousands of years. The basic purpose of all religion has always been to prevent people from ever discovering that they are responsible. It's a simple formula:

- Tell people they must be responsible, but convince them that they cannot possibly be responsible.

If you are created by someone else and that someone else made the plan and dictated the rules, then it's a little hard for you to be responsible. In fact, it's impossible. Being responsible means being a cause. You cannot be a cause if someone else is the cause and that someone is infinitely more powerful than you.

### **How to Convince People**

Create a faith and a belief that God created man and has a plan for man. Once that faith exists, continue through the centuries to enforce it. Then, of course, enforce that faith by teaching the children lies and bad logic. As long as people believe that God created them and has a plan for them, how can they become responsible? Tell people that the solution is to love their fellow men, because love will solve mankind's problems.

But love has never worked although every religious person on Earth believes it will. It doesn't matter what kind of love you are talking about—love is fleeting. It exists for short times, and then it is gone. It feels so good that everyone talks of love in terms of eternity and forever, but it never lasts. And even if it did last, it would not solve the problem it is said to solve. Man must be responsible—he can't turn his responsibility over to something else, no matter how great that something is. He can't depend on love to cause him to do good. He must do good because of his own integrity and inner strength.

I can't see anything wrong with loving people as many and as much as you want, but remember:

- Love is something that you create; not something that creates you.

In other words, you determine your good works—love does not determine them. If love does determine your good works, then you are allowing it to be a cause. That means, in essence, that love is creating you. When love is gone, what happens then?

Think for a minute. Would you want your leader—someone whom you must trust to keep your group and family safe—to be controlled by love? Or would you prefer that he have enough integrity to control himself. Well, no matter, because the centuries have proven the fact. Every new group or new generation has been taught the faith of love and God's plan for man, and it has always worked for evil. Men have always wound up killing, and torturing, and destroying.

Love seems so good, and so wonderful, that in each new generation, there are those who write books and testify to the wonderfulness of love and of God. But the underlying truth that no one ever sees is that these things prevent man from taking responsibility. It doesn't matter how much weird logic they pour into these books or into the sermons or Bible classes; the end result is always the same. Man does not take responsibility and one more time it is off to war.

Take one more look at this before we go on to the next point. Being responsible for oneself means being a cause of oneself. If man is responsible for peace, then he must be a cause of peace.

But if God created the Earth and has a plan for humanity on Earth, how can man be responsible? If God has a plan for a particular man, and God created that man, then how can that man be responsible for himself and his life? He cannot, and man cannot be responsible for peace if God is in control. You can make people feel guilty and hate themselves for not being responsible, but you cannot make them responsible no matter how hard you try.

### **A Strategy for Suppression**

First you give people a solution that cannot work and has never worked, and then tell them they must implement it. When they cannot make it work, you convince them that they are somehow incapable or inherently bad. Then you can keep people squashed down into the mud for millennia, and that is exactly what has happened to man on Earth. It has been deliberately done.

The brutality of man against man has never improved. It has become worse each century. The theory that we are getting better and better doesn't hold up under any kind of logic. Last year

- 7 million people were tortured to death with medical cancer remedies;
- More than 40 wars (armed conflicts) were fought worldwide;
- Hundreds of thousands of people were put out of their homes in the US alone concerning foreclosures, for example there were more than 14,000 foreclosures in Alabama alone.
- All data in this book is provable on the internet. Please check it out.

Knowledge of cures for most diseases has been known for a hundred years or more but people are kept sick to get their money.

Right now, as I write these lines, people in Haiti, the neighboring country to where I live, are being murdered by the thousands and the world ignores it. In Africa, millions are dying from taking antiretroviral (ARV) drugs and the world knows nothing of it. That, my friends, is not a world getting better as time passes. Each year, around the globe, more people are murdered. I shouldn't have to tell you this, and I probably don't need to. But there are so many people unable to open their eyes that I thought I should say something. There is no one so blind as he who won't see.

Life isn't as tremendously complex as millions of books would have you believe. That doesn't mean it is really simple either, but complexities have been added to keep people confused, especially by those talking about religion and enlightenment and peace. They want you to believe in the complexity of it all. You might say, "That is crazy to say something like that. There is no conspiracy of that sort. That many people couldn't be working to confuse us."

Well, let me ask you this: do you really believe that man has retained his brutality throughout the ages just accidentally? That the fact that man has never grown out of his viciousness is merely an accident? If you do believe that, why not take a new look at it?



### 3. The Condition of Existence

The secret condition of existence in this universe is to create. As far as this universe is concerned, if you do not create, you do not exist. This is true for God or any viewpoint of God. Before the beginning, there was eternity. After the end, there is eternity. Eternity has no time, but the universe does. This universe is constructed of Space, Time, Energy, and Matter (STEM). Time is nothing more than the apparently consecutive sequence of events. All those spiritualists who try to explain that time does not exist are looking at eternity or thinking of time as something other than what it is.

Eternity exists outside the universe but not inside. Everything in this universe changes with the sequence of events. Time is simply a word referring to the sequence of events that happen in this universe. That sequence depends on agreements made by the viewers of the events, which are those of us who consider and agree that we are playing the game of this universe. Without a sequence of events, nothing could happen and the universe would not exist.

This is the way it works as I see it: every so many microseconds, or milliseconds, or some measurement of time, there exists another universe like this one, but it is changed just a little to show the next moment of time. Then there is another universe and another. In other words, this universe consists of billions of universes with each one showing the next moment of time just like a movie film. We all observe each new moment of time just as we would observe the next movie frame. Just like a matrix would show us the next frame, but all frames of the universe exist in eternity. So, if you were up above the universe, you could see from the beginning of time to the end of time as it all exists in eternity at the same time. But we see it as time because we are observing one frame at a time. It all exists, but the players can make things change. If you made, for example, an invention that was not yet recorded in time, then from that point if you were above the universe you would

see all the following frames of the universe change to reflect that invention.

So you see, time is only created by us observing each frame of the universe in sequence. Present time is where we all observe the frames of the universe, but all those frames always exist, but they can be changed by the players of the game.



Without a sequence of events

- the electrons in your brain would not move;
- cars would not move;
- the Earth would not rotate around the sun, etc.

So, to say that time does not exist is to say that nothing is moving, that a sequence of events is not happening. Without time the universe does not exist. There would be one fantastic, vast accident with everything happening at once and then it would all be gone in an instant.

It's as if there exists a huge ball, which is what we call the physical universe. This ball sits in a vast eternity that has no time, as there is no sequence of events in this sea of eternity. The events are within the ball (our universe), not outside of the ball. If other universes exist, they exist within the vast eternity, but they are not before or after our universe. Within any one of these universes, all things begin and all things end. That's time. Outside of the universes, there are no beginnings or endings. There is only eternity. Eternity is not empty space, for space exists only within the universe. Eternity simply is.

This universe is not as it appears. Things look solid, but science will tell you there is not much there. Any solid thing is made of billions of molecules, which, in turn, are made of atoms, which, in turn, are made of only a few particles swirling around in a particular manner. There are thousands of times more space in these atoms than there is in the particles. In fact, it is thought by modern science that if all the particles were

collapsed so that they were touching, the entire universe would fit in a space smaller than a basketball.

What would you have then? Those particles are somewhat elusive. They tend to shift and change, and the observer studying them tends to change them by his observations, as if they were only concepts. It is thought by many that they are just concepts. Many articles have been written by scientists about how the smallest particles seem to be changed by the considerations of the observer. In the final analysis, the things in a universe are simply concepts or ideas. A being creates concepts, but he is not made of concepts. The mind has two components for our definition:

1. The brain, which, of course, dies when the body dies;  
and



2. That part of the mind that does not die, but continues to exist in some form as long as one remains in this universe.

Many people have memories of past lives and there is much evidence that some portion of the mind continues down through time.

Do you think this universe is made of anything other than concepts or ideas created by God? Possibly I am wrong, and there is real matter that has weight and energy and space and time, and all that. But if so, there will never be any proof of that. No scientific experiments or theories or philosophies will ever prove that. Why not?

### **We Know Only Through Our Senses**

This is an important point. Because all the information that is ever delivered to you as a person, or as a viewpoint of God comes to you through your senses. No other way. Information enters your eyes, or ears or, skin, or taste, or nose and it all finally enters your brain in the form of electronic nerve impulses. No other way, just electronic nerve impulses.

The brain then interprets those impulses, using memories, education, and personal convictions, and presents them to you in the form of pictures created from the impulses. You see only what is interpreted by your brain from memories, education, and your past conclusions, and from that you make more conclusions. You see? All data goes from the physical universe to nerve impulses into your brain and is then changed by the brain according to your memories, education, and convictions before you see it. There will never be a time when you observe anything other than the results of nerve impulses from your brain. Thus, you will never prove that this universe is anything other than God's ideas.

- The theory above proves that this universe is nothing more than concepts in our minds and can never be more than that. If the universe really exists out there, outside of our mind, we simply cannot prove it.

The theory in the above paragraph, although disliked by many scientists, is fairly reasonable logic. It cannot be disproven, which does not guarantee that it is true, but there isn't any other explanation at this time.

Your universe, the only universe that you will ever know, is the universe that you see when you open your eyes. But guess who created that universe? Do you think God created it? Not so. The only person or thing that could have created your universe is you. Regardless of what you read in the Bible, or learn at church, or what your mother taught you, there is no one but you who could possibly have created the universe that you see.

Again, what you see comes to you in the form of nerve impulses in your brain. The pictures you see are those you create from the nerve impulse information to your brain, plus your memories, education, experience, and beliefs. No matter how you want to believe otherwise, you are the one that creates your universe.

The first thing a baby does is probably draw a breath. That's a creation, and the crying is a creation. And when the baby grows up and becomes a lawyer, he has created being a lawyer.

There is no God that is going to rescue us, nor is there any God that has a great plan for it all (with millions of people suffering and dying each year). It's all us, and if we ever get out of the mess on Earth, we will be the ones to make it happen. Of course, that's bad news for those who don't understand this, but the chances are 99 percent that they won't be reading this. For the rest of us, it's a relief to realize that someone up in the sky who knows best really isn't the one screwing it up, after all.

### **The Practical Side**

We covered the esoteric side, so now let's look at the practical side. When a person is born, many things are already agreed to and this happens mostly automatically. Breathing, the desire to eat, making the body go are all pretty much automatic, but life in general is not automatic. In order to be a doctor, one must create being a doctor. We create our situation in life and the conditions that exist for us. If you are to have a good life, you must create it. When a person creates bad things they are what he has. When you create good things, then they are what you have. People are known in this life by what they create. Even the Bible says it:

- “By their works, ye shall know them.”

You already know that you get what you create. It is the basis of karma and other past-life theories. Well, that's not really exactly the karma theory, but it is close. The idea of karma is mainly that you will be somehow caused to pay for those things you do in this life by things that will happen to you in a future life. The religious theory, however, is that the punishment comes from somewhere else. Some higher being or condition or heaven sees that it all equals out.

It does pretty much go that way, but there is a little more logic to it. Things you do stick in your mind more than things that happen to you or things you think. The key word is **do**. What

you do sticks there. So what you do sticks in your mind, be it good or bad.

When you do bad or hurtful things, they stick in your mind just below the conscious level. They will stick there for hundreds of years. That's the way minds are. You can sit and think and think for days, but what becomes a part of your mind is what you **did** during those days. Subconsciously, you will be looking at your next lifetime or lifetimes through the hurtful or bad things you did. You will always be looking at the world and seeing those things and they will influence your behavior.

Bad things there will create a certain amount of guilt, and since guilt is one of the worse pains, you will seek to avoid it. This is to your advantage as you may wind up doing a good thing to overcome the guilt. That could then cancel out the subconscious memory of the bad deed.

Of course, good things in your mind help you create good things. However, too many bad things in your subconscious may not work out so well. You may just wind up creating more bad things, as that might be the only thing you can see as you look through your subconscious mind at the world.

This is one more example of how the responsibility for your life rests with you. Even your punishment rests with you. It's automatic because it is in your mind. That's the way minds work in this universe. You set up your own retribution, and it happens automatically. Bad things are more dramatic than the other stuff, and the bad things stick in your mind harder and longer.

Many have used meditation to try and overcome the bad things in the subconscious, but in my opinion that isn't possible. Many of the sages and holy men of India are convinced that they can meditate away their "Karma" (basically bad deeds). If that was happening, you would expect to see something great coming from those areas where the holy men practice. But little improvement has been demonstrated. Many of them live in pretty high style, but there is very little improvement in their country or in the living conditions of their serfs.

Some others are convinced that they have developed a way of removing the bad things through other mental techniques. Of course, all types of therapy work a little bit. But I have not been able to find any past-life therapy that overcomes the bad things one has done by removing the memories or by removing emotions connected to the memories. There are always some who seem to get relief, but not many.

However, removing the emotions connected to past life subconscious memories does not eliminate the influence of those memories, and does not mean they cannot still cause havoc in one's life. I have seen it happen many times where people have believed they had overcome some past life memory, but it still acted against them. It has happened with people I was working with, over and over. So there is a limited extent to what can be overcome by anything other than just living out the bad deed by some sort of a good deed or a good life.



## 4. The Secret Reason for Creation

Some philosophies have contended that life is a game, but most have not explained this point very well. So I will try to cover it a little better.

All players seek to maintain a game. Even in prison camps during the war, when prisoners were starving to death, they were still playing games. Stand a child in the corner of his room, and he will soon figure out a game. The game of life is the most fascinating game of all, but all games have to do with bringing about situations in which the player must create one emotion or another. The game of chess, if you have ever played it, will create many emotions in the players. Boredom is the least desirable of all emotions. Thus, prison is one of the least desirable places to be.

### Integrity in the Game

At the highest level in this universe, or at least on Earth, there is pure joy in playing the game, whatever it might be. At the highest level of pleasure is the joy of the game. If it is a game of basketball, then the player himself, at the highest level, is experiencing the joy of the game.

The real joy of any game is not necessarily winning, but rather maintaining oneself within the integrity of the game. Integrity requires that you always do your level best while maintaining honesty and fairness in the game. People have fun and joy even when they don't win. In the long run, they have more fun when they maintain themselves within the rules and etiquette of the game. When one begins to bend the rules or just do less than the required politeness for that game, one begins to have less joy.



Somewhat less than joy is fun, and less than that might be enthusiasm for the game. When one is less than enthusiastic,

he may become reserved about the game. As one drops down the scale from reserved, he will probably become bored, then annoyed, then angry, fearful, grieving, despairing, and finally he might get totally apathetic about playing games at all.

- Boredom is the first level of emotion that is painful. Downward from boredom one becomes less and less aware, and thus less able to feel the pain.

The integrity that you have for yourself is what maintains joy, and fun, and love of life. If you lose your integrity trying to win, you lose your joy and enjoyment of life. People almost always forget their personal integrity when they start believing in the importance of winning. Down through the ages, many wise men have pointed out the fallacy of this kind of thinking. Remember the classic saying by Grantland Rice:

“When the great scorer comes  
To score against your name,  
It won’t be whether you won or lost,  
But how you played the game.”

Wise men have known it through the ages.

### **Lose Your Integrity and Slide Downwards**

The whole subject of games is a little more complex than this. Look at humanity for a minute. At first, for any new participant in the universe, there is joy, but as one’s integrity falls away while trying to win a game, the joy falls away also. At first there are games where everyone wins. That is the most joy, as there are no losers. Then one falls away to games in life with “I win, you lose” situations.

As a person’s integrity continues to fall away, he believes that he can only win over the other guy by cheating or lying a bit. But since he believes he needed to lie or to cheat, he knows deep inside that he really didn’t win after all. The guilt, however small, continues to rob him of joy and fun. As his integrity worsens and it takes ever more cheating to win, the guilt finally gets too great.

All this time, of course, he will be proclaiming to himself and others how great he is. Gradually, he will start playing games with himself rather than cheating others. At this point, the games with himself come in the form of problems. He may lose his job, his car may quit working, and his wife could leave him. He may himself be cheated, but it will be all his own doing and if you observe him carefully, that will be quite evident. The game of it all is to solve the problems he has created, and this does happen.

When a person has had continuous problems for years or centuries (i.e. from life to life), he will eventually decide that he must teach himself lessons so that in the future he can avoid the problems.

- This is the point that those spiritualists have reached who are so adamant about learning lessons here on Earth.

One may continue to teach himself lessons for years or even for lifetimes. As a person finds that teaching himself lessons is not improving his life or reducing his problems, he teaches himself ever more severe lessons. This continues until the pain becomes too much.

He then believes that he has been wrong about everything and decides to listen only to others. In effect, he decides to become a slave. As a slave, he will only do what others tell him. He becomes a model citizen, or a good soldier, and always does what he is supposed to do. He quits thinking for himself and has others think for him. In almost all situations, people do not become religious until they finally hit this low level. They try to do only what they think God wants them to do. They know, because of all the pain they have caused themselves, that they cannot be doing things right, so they follow the one being that is supposed to be perfect and right all the time, which is God.

After being a slave for a long time, either to various Earthly organizations and people, or to God, a person may finally figure that he



has nothing left to do. He's lost it all. He will probably wind up hiding, perhaps in prison or out in the mountains. But you can see a few of these people even in the city. They live behind closed blinds in a darkened house. Their car will have dark windows. (Not all dark-windowed cars are owned by people in hiding, but some are.) In hiding, one has lost all aspects of the game.

The person may have a few minor games that he plays with himself, but nothing major. When you hide for years or centuries, you must finally pull yourself up by your bootstraps, since no one can go out the bottom. Anyone who wants to leave this universe must go out the top, as there is no exit out the bottom. By out of this universe I mean not be here, and not play this game here any longer. But that is only possible for someone who is highly enlightened and understands all of the game.

The trip downward described here is only when a person never cleans up his act. It only happens when one allows his integrity to continue to slip and become worse and worse. Those who find philosophies or even religions that help them improve their integrity for even a short while often reverse their direction and go upward, the opposite of what is described here. This only works for a short while, maybe a few years, but as long as one ascribes his integrity to God or to a philosophy, it will not last long. True integrity comes from within oneself, and never from the commandments of another, be it God or the devil. Throughout the trip downward or upward, the Player (person) is always experiencing the emotions created. That, after all, is the purpose of the game.

The second most important secret to playing games in this universe has been hidden longer than any other, and it is the subject of the next chapter.



## 5. The Secret Name of the Universe

It really isn't the name, but you could almost call it that. The idea of a name of the Universe has been held secret for so long that it seems unreasonable it should ever come to light. This secret, like many of the secrets of this Universe, sits out in plain sight. It should not have been missed for such a long time. This name of the Universe is also the secret name of all of the games of this Universe and the secret is held in every mind here. The value of knowing this secret cannot be measured in dollars and cents, but it is interestingly great.

Well, at least I like to be dramatic and call it the name of the Universe. I think many people would agree with me that this is a good name for the Universe, and, who knows, maybe it really is the name of the Universe?

So let me tell you.

➤ **The secret name of this Universe is “drama.”**

That is the basis of every game in this Universe and the goal of every game. This goal is senior to all other goals in the games of life and all other goals in life. Deep within the mind is the command to create drama. The Player uses his mind to compute answers he feels will make him win the games in which he is involved, but what has never been revealed to him is that

- The goal of any game is to create drama.

He does not realize that all computations coming from his mind are influenced by the unsuspected command to create drama. While the Player is seeking to win a game, he is computing with a mind that is created to produce maximum drama from the game. That's what this Universe is for, creating “drama.” This purpose is senior to all other purposes.

You could imagine this universe as a big ball and on the outside of it is a giant sign saying, “drama.” There might be other universes with different names and different games, but we only know of this one.

### What is drama?

- Emotionally involving, exciting, tense, or gripping events or actions (definition combined from several dictionaries).

At this point, a person will often claim, “Oh, I’m not trying to be dramatic. I’m just doing my thing.” It has been our experience to observe many people who claimed they are not trying for drama, but what we always see is someone trying hard to create drama.

One of the more dramatic things is to be a humble peasant toiling in the fields. Then, of course, the field is burned or otherwise destroyed, and the peasant’s family starves or some other disaster happens. It’s very dramatic, at least for those to whom it is happening. Another dramatic thing is to live a simple life that is totally undramatic. One can then talk endlessly about how nothing ever happens to him; or one lives a totally simple life one lifetime and the next one is completely the opposite; or one lives as a peasant his whole lifetime, but who can say that is not dramatic? To a person who has lived as a king before, that might be very dramatic.



Look at the direction TV commercials have taken. They almost always go for drama. The louder, the more boisterous, the greater the hand motions, the higher they jump, the more dramatic they can be, the better. And TV programs also go for drama, especially children’s programs. The more dramatically anything can be said, the better children like it. Humor is often based on the idea that some situation is dramatic or is pretended to be dramatic. Most cartoons are based on this concept. From watching children playing in the back yard to listening to the neighbor talk about her operations, you will always see the effort to be dramatic.

Above all else, the Player seeks joy—the joy of playing the games of this universe. The Players seek to create drama in

the game and this drama brings about joy, or if not joy, then fun, and if not fun then enthusiasm, and so on down the spectrum. In all games, at all levels of integrity right up to the moment of dying, the Player seeks to create drama in the particular game of life that he is playing. From the old lady hobbling along with her walker to the young guys jumping out of airplanes, they all are seeking to create drama in their games.

This is not to say that winning at whatever business or game in life you are doing is not the best idea. Winning is the best idea, it just must be with integrity to be able to enjoy the win, and anyone who gets the idea that failing in a business is more dramatic than winning should seek to change his mind about that. The problem is that each person has his own hidden belief in, and understanding about, what is dramatic. So look carefully at what you are doing, and be careful that you are not creating drama rather than winning. Stop and observe whether you are doing things logically or making a bunch of mistakes and refusing to admit it or to confront them. Look closely. Move carefully until you are certain that you can win.

Even though the Player may not realize it, he is always playing for drama. Dying of cancer, or being a drug addict, or an alcoholic, fighting in a war, or demonstrating against wars, or any other dramatic thing, is in line with the secret game of being dramatic, and thus totally acceptable to the Player if these things fit into his own basic opinion of drama.

The Player will seek drama, and, unfortunately, when he thinks that failure or dying is the most dramatic option, that is what he will bring about. When a person feels that he is not creating enough drama for himself, he will seek ways to make his life more dramatic, and if he feels that the negative side of drama is most dramatic, he will go negative. Or, if he has lost the ability to create positive drama, he will go negative. We see this most often in criminals. They cannot create positive drama, so they go negative. This is also true of every drunk and every drug addict.

Of course, there is always a psychological explanation, and it is often true. But the psychologists cannot see the underlying

principle of drama that is guiding it all. Here we have a Vietnam veteran. He comes home all screwed up from the war and the terrible things he saw and did while there. He becomes a drunk and loses all the jobs that he gets. Finally, we see him on the street as a homeless beggar. The psychologist's explanation for his condition is that he saw very bad things in Vietnam. But what about the thousands of others who came home and didn't become homeless beggars? The underlying reason that the psychologist doesn't see is the drama of it all. How terrible it all was and how terribly it affected him creates the drama. The difference, of course, is the difference in people. Some are not looking, or interested in, this kind of drama.



What a Player thinks is dramatic depends on his education in this lifetime plus his past before this lifetime. Education consists of the school of hard knocks as well as standard schooling. What people consider dramatic is often quite insane, but the fact remains that people control their destiny. It is hidden that they do, but it is still a fact. People will go to all kinds of lengths to prove that they are not in control of their life. They will go to church every Sunday and thank God for their life, and thank him for taking their loved ones, and thank him for giving them a job, or for seeing that they were fired.

Church each Sunday is mostly a dose of, "I'm not responsible." A person might hide many things from himself, and, in fact, there are many things hidden in one's mind. Each of us hides many secrets there, and often those hidden things are part of our subconscious thinking. These subconscious thoughts can cause us to do many weird things, but it is all our own doing, not someone else's. What we do and what we bring about in our life is based on creating drama.

All those hidden things lead to drama because that is the basis of all games in this universe. It is also the basic hidden computation in all decisions made, with the exception that if you know about this, then you can usually avoid adding it to the

computation if you want. However, it is normally not desirable to remove the drama computation.

It is possible to make decisions without using the mind. That is almost always the case when one all of a sudden overcomes some bad situation or problem. One knows what to do without thinking. You just know. In that case, one of two things is happening:

- The Player is kidding himself; or
- He really has chosen to know.

After all, any Player knows all things and can know what to do to solve a problem.

In the case of just knowing, the idea of drama is not involved, because the mind is left out of the loop. Still, throughout the world, all people follow what they think is drama for them. The ideas of what drama is can often be quite stupid. Still, deep inside, each person follows his own ideas concerning drama.



## 6. The Purpose of Drama

We say that the idea of life as drama is secret because it is not well known. I have not been able to find it in any other place. But almost all endeavors in life are for the purpose of emotion. You are driven to create emotions, and, when they are created, they drive you.

People in a theater are all watching the screen, but what they are experiencing is the emotion they create from the situations presented on the screen. When people ride a roller coaster, or ride in a speed boat, or go skiing, they are experiencing the emotion of the thrill. When a person reads a book, he is experiencing the emotions he creates from the story in the book.

However, the strongest emotions come from situations that you create through playing the game of life. That is true when you play the game of life—but some people run from it.

This may surprise you a bit. Remember the explanation of how all that anyone can ever experience is the pictures and electronic nerve impulses created and/or modified by the brain? Well, the individual himself, the person, the spirit who is observing the impulses and pictures arriving for him to observe may never himself move an inch. He feels the gravity, the inertia of movement, the wind in his hair, the chill of the air, but all these things are nothing more than nerve impulses being presented to him by his brain. He will never be able to prove that he is really out there riding a motor cycle. I'm not saying that he is or isn't, but it could be that he really isn't doing anything more than experiencing the electronic impulses coming to him.

### **Enter the Matrix by Larry and Andy Wachowski**

There are those who believe that this universe is the real matrix. They believe that everything that happens is controlled by the matrix, and that we all have a certain role in programming the matrix. But let me explain a little bit for those

who have not followed the movies and other explanations of the matrix.

There are some games these days that create a virtual reality. A virtual reality is a computer-generated landscape or other reality that exists in a computer. Some such realities seem very real. The player puts on a pair of electronic glasses in which each lens is a miniature computer screen. The double screen gives him a 3D effect.

He may put on some electronic gloves and in some really good setups he may even put on some electronic boots and walk on a moving walk. In that case his whole universe is contained in the computer. He sees a complete 3D landscape in which he can walk. The computer shows him more and more as he walks along the moving walk, but he only sees what the computer shows him. In a short time, he begins to feel that it is all real. Of course, he wears earphones so he hears sounds, and when he puts out his hand his glove reacts and he thinks he touches something, but his touch and everything else is just programmed into the matrix in the computer.

Well now, there is nothing to prove that we don't live in a virtual reality. We could say that our matrix is programmed in the mind of God. We could say that we have a limited ability to program this matrix and that some people are better than others at programming it.

- We program the matrix by our choices and to some extent by our desires and other mental emotions and ideas.

Many people will object to this idea, but no one will be able to disprove it. Here is something that might help you think along these lines. Each year there are about three miracles per every 100,000 people. In the US, that's about 12,000 miracles a year. They are not reported, but they show up in books and back pages of newspapers and magazines and other reports both written and spoken.

For example, one lady friend of mine was driving down a small mountain pass. As she rounded a curve, she found a gasoline tanker truck completely blocking the road from one side to the other. There was no room even to walk past either end of the tanker. About 10 feet from it, she closed her eyes and gritted her teeth. When no crash occurred she opened her eyes and looked in the rear-view mirror. The tanker was receding as her car continued down the mountain road.

I know of dozens of these miracles, and if you look for them, you will see them from time to time. The only real explanation for such miracles is the matrix theory. Modern science can't explain them, so they claim they don't happen. But they do happen all the time. The matrix is the only real explanation for miracles and magic that really work, and sometimes magic really does work. Reality is really the programming of the Matrix and miracles are simply programming that is outside of the standard agreed upon programming. But in theory anything can be programmed in the real Matrix which is this universe or a just a computer matrix in a game, but in most cases the players must stay within what has been agreed upon for the programming of the computer game or the universe.

Creating emotions is one of the reasons people are so stuck on creating the emotion of love. It feels good. Joy is higher, but love is great. It is one of the things this universe is about. Nothing wrong with it. Have a ball. Just don't expect it to save you. It can't save you any better than the other emotions. Joy is much greater than love. It does not invoke calamities, and it also moves you to do great things.

So let's get back to the reason for this Universe matrix. The most desirable emotions are the pleasure emotions, joy being the highest and the most desirable over all. Some of the positive emotions are joy, love, fun, happiness, and enthusiasm. The negative emotions such as anger, hate, fear, regret, and jealousy are painful emotions. People often do not recognize the negative emotions as painful, but these emotions drive people to do terrible things in order to get over the pain of it all. For example, an angry man may lash out and destroy a

window, or hit someone to overcome the pain. Actually, lashing out at the proper target often does lessen the pain of anger or hate. Anger is an emotion that we usually seek to avoid. The consideration evidently is that any emotion is better than none. When a person has had so much negativity in his life that he cannot seem to create positive emotions, he will still seek to create emotions even if they are painful.



## 7. The First Lie

You have probably already guessed what the first lie is, but let me tell you anyway.

- **The first lie of this universe is that the purpose of the games is to win.**

That's really not true. The real purpose of the games in life is to create drama so you can feel the resulting emotions.

Joy, fun, enthusiasm, interest, and even love, are all emotions created from drama. The real purpose of the games of life is drama and the resulting emotions. It is like going to Disneyland. The idea is to have fun and enjoy yourself. The fun and enjoyment of this universe depend on the games you play while here. The lie is that you are here to win the games. No. You are here to create drama and to experience emotions.

I call this lie the first one because it seems to be the first important lie that a Player encounters. So this basic lie, that the purpose of all the games is to win, is highly published. For thousands of years, all of humanity has assumed that the greatest thing is winning games. When one understands the real facts, the games of life become more fun and easier to handle. So if you are going to set up a game in life (a business, for example), make sure that it is going to be more dramatic to win than to lose. If you really want to win, check the drama, because drama is senior to winning.

The next thing to check is your integrity in the game you are playing. It is dramatic to fail because of poor integrity. Poor integrity is always the reason for failure. If you are failing, you have missed something in the whole of it. The only reason we don't see that is that integrity extends outward to cover many areas we might miss.

For example, let's say that a person failed because he did not understand the restaurant business well enough. Well, that is poor integrity. He should have learned the restaurant business

well before starting. Check the dictionary; integrity means completeness or wholeness. If the integrity is to be unbroken concerning a business, one must cover all aspects and know them all. To have not learned one aspect of the restaurant business is to let one's integrity slip in that area, since the integrity of the restaurant business would be all areas of it—the whole of it.

You could hire someone else who knows a certain area of the restaurant business, and then you are paying attention and not leaving an area to go unchecked. You might allow your integrity to slip in one little area—maybe you are more trusting than you should be—but the failure from this slip of integrity may be more dramatic than success would have been. Many people lose at the games they set up and never realize why.

The fact is, whether it is in businesses or in other types of games, a great many more of these games are lost than won. In Los Angeles in one year, more than 90 percent of start-up restaurants failed. People, of course, hide the reason for failure from themselves. Karma and all the other factors also figure into the reason for losing. It is dramatic to lose an important game due to being repaid for bad karma.

Remember though, that even if you fail because of karma, it is because you caused the failure yourself, not because karma caused it. If a person's karma is bad, the bad thing, what ever it was, is always there in his subconscious mind. He must in essence always look through that bad thing to see his game. The Players agree together openly that the purpose of the games is to win. This is the basic first lie. The real underlying purpose of the game is to create drama.

Chapters 3–8 discuss the greatest secrets of the physical universe. These secrets are well hidden and almost impossible to uncover. The entire game of drama is buried beneath thousands of agreements kept secret to prevent their contents from ever becoming known. The secrets are held in the mind and include the rules of pleasure, pain, emotion, reincarnation, past lives, retribution, good and evil, and cause and effect.



The secrets are interlocked in such a manner that it is all but impossible to uncover any one of them, and the most important secrets are covered most thoroughly.

However, because of the nature of the Players, there is one secret that continues to surface, and that is, “Nothing is impossible,” and thus the secrets given here were finally uncovered.

The game of drama includes the search for the secrets. There are many more secrets. Some fear that to find them all will destroy the universe, but not so. The drama has been played in ignorance too long. It’s time to find a few of the secrets—as many of them as we can.



## 8. The Second Lie

The second lie and the most important rule of the game of drama is, “All things must have a cause.” This is not a secret. It is well known. It is one of the most important theories of the New Age philosophies. It is probably the most highly advertised idea of all sciences, philosophies, and even religions. It sounds great, and, in fact, the physical universe does operate quite efficiently under this theory. It is included in the basic agreements of the drama. All things that happen to the beings of this universe, the players, are caused by something or other. They don’t “just happen.” It sounds good. It sounds right for this universe, but that is the lie. A player is a little more complex than that.

### **The Facts of the Matter**

This universe is a created universe. There is no such thing as a universe that is caused by something. To create something is to do or bring about something that your intend to do. It is something done intentionally. Normally when you cause something it is something that just happens without your intention. Thus something might happen because of something you do but it is not particularly done intentionally as it is when you create something. There are only universes that are created by something—basically God. This is a created universe. It didn’t just happen. Everything in this universe was created. Nothing was caused by something else. It’s impossible. This universe is created by the concepts of the God who is creating it. The agreement is that things will happen in sequence (that concepts will happen in sequence). The Players create them and observe them in sequence. It’s the rule of the matrix.

This universe is a series of mental commands with each set of commands slightly different than the set before. But one set of pictures, no matter what the sequence, cannot influence the next set any more than one frame of a movie frame causes the next movie frame. God makes the next frame of pictures in the

universe. He has agreed with himself that the next frame will be only slightly different than the one before. But it is because God creates the next frame, not because one frame is causing any effect on the next frame. We are talking about the outside universe, not the universe that is in your mind.



That sounds esoteric, but let us look at the practical side. This morning a driver didn't observe a red light and pulled out right in front of you. It made you mad. It caused you to get angry.

- Wrong. Only you control your mind, not that other driver, not that situation.

You looked at what happened and you decided to get angry, so you created the anger. There is nothing that driver can do to make you mad or create anger for you or make a decision. It is always your choice. You could have chosen to be angry the minute you got into the car (many people do). Or you could have chosen to not get angry no matter what.

Let's say someone called you a stupid fool and it made you mad.

- Wrong again. Someone called you a stupid fool and you decided to create anger.

You looked at the situation and made the decision to become angry. It can't happen any other way. Nothing and no one can create the emotion of anger for you, except you.

The appearance is that one happening causes the next one.



The truth is that we agree that this is the case and we then create the next situation to satisfy this rule (which I call Rule 8 because it is explained here in Chapter 8). The critical word here is **create**. We **create** the next situation. Not only do we do this in our lives, but God does it as well, in the programming in his mind. One

happening doesn't cause the next happening. God has agreed with himself that his subconscious mind will follow the rules in his mind and this causes the matrix to continue acting as always.

There is nothing wrong with the physical universe working that way—with everything having a cause. We've agreed to it. It's part of the game. The tree has fallen down and the cause was the high wind that blew it down. But when it comes to the Players and their minds, it is a disaster to always follow Rule 8. There is no point in getting mad when someone does something to make you mad. Live your life so that you make up your own mind about the emotions you generate and don't allow others to cause your emotions, good or bad. There is always another choice.

You can choose to follow Rule 8 and let your mind react to the situation, or you can simply make another choice. The Player is here playing the game, but he does not have to become the effect of this rule or the consideration here. There would be no advantage to creating anger when someone calls you a name, unless you want the anger. The mind is the most complex thing of this universe. You, the owner, have control. Nobody can make decisions in your mind but you, and nothing can create emotions for you but you.

You may say, "But they brainwash or torture people to change their minds." The fact is, even in torture and brainwashing, you have to make the decision to change your mind. Many times men have been tortured and brainwashed but their minds were not changed. It's still always you. The idea of Cause is based on the agreement that happenings are sequentially caused by the previous happening—that one frame in the sequence will influence the next frame. This idea is an agreement and only an appearance. Nothing can influence



anything else except to the extent that the Players agree to make their actions do that.

When one frame is gone, it is gone. It cannot have an effect on the next frame except to the extent that we agree it does. The same basic idea is seen in the sequence of the various frames of a movie. One frame cannot influence the next frame. Neither can one movie influence the next movie except to the extent that the movie creators create that scenario.

If you don't believe this, simply enroll in one of the fire-walking courses now being given in various parts of the US and the world. Every week, people walk barefoot though 1600-degree, red-hot coals without burning their feet. They have simply agreed that the heat cannot cause a burn. Such things happen every day; they are called miracles, as I mentioned before.

The Players agree together secretly to pretend that there is cause. Drama and winning are based on the result of the pretended cause.

### **Examples of Cause vs. Choice**

1. Someone steps out from the curb and causes a Player in a car to swerve into a telephone pole. The Player explains that the someone caused the accident and this satisfies Rule 8, but is not true. In this case, as in all cases, the Player looked at the person who stepped out and decided to swerve, and decided to hit the pole. These were decisions or choices that the Player made. He could have hit the person, or run through him without hurting him, or vanished the car and put it back on the other side of him, or a thousand other things, or the Player could have done nothing.

The accident was just a creation on the Player's part to act out Rule 8 for the drama of it. There is always choice. A more detailed explanation would go like this: The mind of the Player in the car meshes with the mind of the Player who stepped out. They pretend to not be in communication. The Player who stepped out is not yet

ready to die. The Player driving the car is in a mental condition that is ready for an accident. The Player driving the car makes a choice that will ruin the car. It's the kind of drama he is ready for in his life. The game goes according to the rules to which the Players have agreed and the choices that the Players make.

2. Betty now hates her grandmother. The cause was that her grandmother slapped her and called her a monster when she was three years old. Wrong. There are thousands of kids who were slapped and now don't hate their grandmothers. She hates her grandmother because she made the decision to hate. Probably it was to satisfy the drama that would result from Rule 8. But the cause was neither her grandmother nor the slap. It was simply her decision. It is impossible for a slap or anything but Betty to make a decision in Betty's mind.

It goes something like this, after, of course, Betty has done something to irritate her grandmother:

- BAM (the slap);
- Betty's mind computes: "25 pounds of pressure equals 10 ergs of pain";
- Betty creates the pain, then screams, "Waa, you hurt me."

The mind says Grandma "caused" the pain and that equals hate. Betty creates the hate to satisfy Rule 8 to pretend that Grandma caused it. But, in fact, it was Betty's choice.



## 9. How Are Things Going?

Things are always going according to the choices that the Player has made. He has arrived at his situation in life not because of what has happened to him, nor even how he was brought up, but only because of the choices that he has made. Of course, how he was brought up and his education are going to have a great influence on his choices. No doubt about that. But the fact remains that his choices have gotten him to any situation in which he finds himself.

You may ask, “But what about the man who was born crippled? How did his choices cause him to be a cripple?”

- All people have lived before. We choose a body that we know we deserve.

There really is no God that is so mean that he would start some people off blind, others crippled, and others with AIDS. One of the worst things that one might say or think is that a baby is responsible for having arrived in his terrible condition or in a terrible home situation. But the fact is, he is there because of his choices.

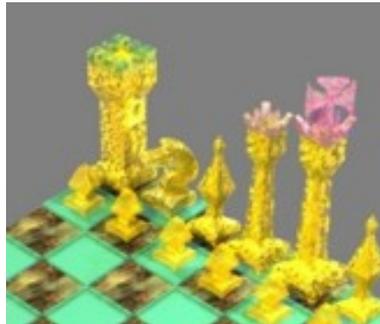
That doesn't mean we blame the baby for being there. There is no such thing as blame. He's there. He's playing that game. And we can be playing the game of helping him, if that is our situation. It will be a few years before the baby will again be totally responsible for his situation. He chose a situation and condition and now he has to put up with them. He is there because of his choices.

His first choice was to play the game. As long as he remains in this universe, his choices will determine his conditions. But how are things really going? The Player is always succeeding at the particular drama that he wants. Things are secretly going his way. It doesn't matter what it is—if it is happening, it is what the Player is creating and secretly what he wants. If the Player believes that it is dramatic to teach himself lessons, he will do

that. If that is what he thinks he deserves, that is the drama he will create.

On the other hand, there are Players who think it is dramatic to have fun, and they do have fun. Actually teaching oneself lessons is pretty far down on the chart. The only thing lower is becoming a slave and joining some church or cult, or going into hiding. The Player may complain and cry about what is happening to him, but secretly he believes that it is very dramatic. Discuss anyone's life with him, and eventually you will see that he feels it is very dramatic.

Can things be changed? The Player's decisions are always senior to Rule 8, that all things must have a cause. The Player can make a better life when he decides to, and he needs no other criteria. You can see this happening with drunks and druggies, for example. When the drunk really hits bottom and really believes that things can get no worse, all of a sudden you will find him straightening up and finding a new life. That doesn't always happen; many times he will choose to die in the bad condition as it is the most dramatic.



Of course, you do not have to hit bottom to change your life. Many people change their lives when they just decide to do so. Sometimes a person will change his life while being helped by a therapist, but more on that later. The Player's basic idea about his life is almost always that it is dramatic.

Those who say that their lives are not dramatic are merely **dramatizing** that they have an undramatic life, one that is **dramatically** uneventful. Again it's the Player's past, coupled with his education, that determines what he considers dramatic. If a Player does not think his life is dramatic, he will change it.

Who must be satisfied that the drama is correct? The Player plays the game of drama secretly for himself. Only his opinion of his life counts. When he leaves the game, he is the only one that he must satisfy that he played a good game. Only he judges himself. Outside the universe, there is no penalty. **All the penalties are in the game.** All penalties of life are imposed on the Player by himself. No one else can do that. Only the Player decides whether he played correctly and created the correct amount of drama.

There is one rule that the Player is strictest with himself about, always, and that is the rule to “maintain integrity in imposing penalties.” In imposing any reward or penalty, a Player always observes integrity to the maximum. His opinion of himself and his position in the game always depends upon integrity. If he lets his emotions or his desire for power, sex, or money lead him astray, there is always a penalty and he always imposes it on himself.



## 10. About Therapies

### ***To Change a Player's Condition***

For our purpose here this phrase refers to the removal of an unwanted condition or conditions from a player's mind such as:

- fear or worry;
- grief over a lost love;
- mental illness;
- unwanted drug dependency; and
- unwanted physical conditions.

Positive change of any of these conditions would be indicated by an increase of one's happiness level, which is the purpose of all therapies and all promises of future rewards, such as heaven or Nirvana.

No therapy of any kind, such as psychology, Scientology, Dianetics, and loving Jesus, can change a Player's condition. The Player creates his own condition. His past does not create his condition no matter how bad it was, nor does therapy, nor any external influence. The player often continues to create his condition to satisfy Rule 8 (please see Chapter 8, *The Second Lie*) which states that all things must have a cause, but he is continuing to keep his condition in creation at all times.

Therapies are a part of the game, but the Player only changes when he decides to change and no sooner. Sometimes, in therapy, the Player finds that he is ready to change and thus he changes. The thing that satisfies Rule 8 is that he can say that the therapy changed him.

Think for a minute. No matter what is happening, nothing can put a single decision into your mind. No matter what is happening, you are in control of your mind. It does not matter what your father said, or your school teacher, or even who punched you in the nose. Only **you** can change your mind. The

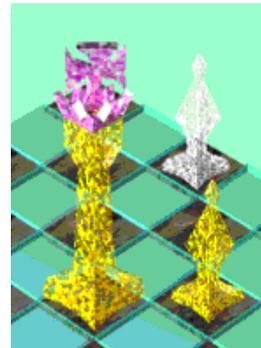
proof of the pudding is that there are those who were treated terribly and tortured badly and yet they came out of it without a scar.

Others came out of similar traumas in a terrible condition, insane, or worse, and they said it was all caused by how they were treated. We can feel sad for them and help them, but the fact remains that they made all the decisions that made them insane or damaged them. When a person gets well after being treated terribly, it is because he makes the decision to get well. He won't make the decision to get well unless he wants to get well. Almost any therapist will tell you that the person must want to get better before he will do so. We are just pointing out that that is doubly true. When a person decides to get well, he can get well immediately, but it may take some time.

When in therapy, it is simpler to say that the therapy caused you to get well, since then you don't have to take any responsibility for it. When a Player is ready to change, picking through his mind with one of the therapeutic techniques may give him the excuse he needs to change. Getting him to believe in Jesus is often very effective if he has

been trying to teach himself lessons for a long time. And some other philosophy or religion may do it. There is also the fact that if one is ready to change, he can just change and he needs no therapy to do so. It often happens.

Over the centuries on Earth alone, thousands of therapies have been invented. The majority of them have had success but none have had what an outsider would call resounding success, even though they all claim such success. The mind is complex. We have all agreed to Rule 8 that all things must have a cause in the physical realm, but this does not always have to be the case. We often choose what we want to react to and we ignore other things. Our mind, however, is quite tricky.



It contains much that we don't know about or don't remember, but it still uses those things for its computations.

To have amateurs poking around in your mind can be a negative thing for you. They can't hurt you unless you decide to be hurt, but you can wind up believing something that you know nothing about.

- You can only be hurt by being convinced that you are hurt and that can happen.

Most of the philosophical therapies, such as Scientology, which are known as clearing therapies, and the various religions lead one in the direction of becoming a slave. If a person gets the idea that being a slave to one of those cults or to God will be dramatic, he will probably join or be saved or born again. Don't buy any of that stuff until you really check with your eyes open.

Scientists make slaves of their members. You are told how to think, and act, and live. You may not believe that they can tell you how to think, but they can and they do. They mostly use fear to control their members, but once you are in, you become a true believer and bow down to their control, believing that it is great and honorable. (See Chapter 29, *Religions: The False Games* for more on this.) The wisest course is to thoroughly check these groups out before you become a believer.

### **Improving Your Condition**

Would you like to know how to improve your condition?

- The secret is that you must improve your integrity.

What does that mean?

Integrity means everything, the completeness of anything. The integrity is the all of whatever is in question. So a person needs to go over all areas of his life and decide how he can improve them. Do not leave anything out. Examples are:

- education;
- nutrition;

- personal hygiene;
- understanding of banking and finance;
- how you treat people; and
- how you shake hands. (I add this last point in to show that all the points of integrity can cover very small things that are important.)

In short, you need to examine your life and improve all areas that need improving. As you improve these things, you improve spiritually, not because you decide to go to church, but because, as you improve the way you live, you also improve your spirituality. They go together.

However, improving one area of your life without improving most others won't help much. For example, just getting a college degree wouldn't be enough. One would need to improve health, attitudes, habits, and relationships. (Please see Chapter 19, *Acceptance and Healing*, for a meditation to improve one's attitudes.) When you raise the level of your daily life in these ways, you also improve your spirituality.

Some more examples might be to:

- dress more neatly;
- understand more about your automobile;
- eat more fresh food rather than processed food;
- keep your house tidier and your yard better maintained;
- donate some time to a local charity; and
- learn more about your children's school(s).

As these things improve, so will your life, and believe it or not, so will your spirituality and integrity.

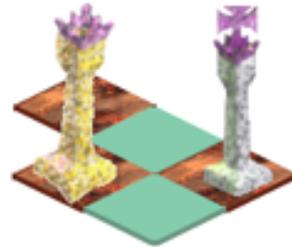
### **Playing the Game**

You know enough of the rules to get out there and do a good job of it. Go out there and play your game to the hilt, live life to the fullest. You know who you are and what this universe is all

about. It's basically for fun and joy. So go have fun. Play at the game, but don't get too serious. Be intense, as intense as you wish to be. But serious is something else. When people get too serious, losing their sense of fun, they make bad decisions and hurt people.

Remember the rules of integrity. Go for the truth in the games. Those who play with false games always fail in the end. It may look good for a long time, but when they fail, they fail in proportion to the damage they caused in the false game. For example, medical people are playing many false games at this time and karma of one kind or another will catch up with them. If you only look at one lifetime, it seems OK to take money from people and give death back. But everyone has lifetimes to come, billions of years, and whether it is fun or very painful depends on your integrity.

Look carefully at any game you are in. If you are not honest with yourself, you could be racking up bad karma while trying to do good. For example, Dr. Salk, the man who created the Polio vaccine, testified in Congress that his vaccine did not work. But



Congress voted to use it anyway, because of the millions of dollars involved. This is a matter of Congressional record. Children die from this vaccine every year. Those who know this vaccine is useless and that it causes deaths, and give it to children anyway, are definitely racking up negative karma. If you doubt this read <http://www.wellwithin1.com/salkvacc.htm>.

If you find you are involved in something bad and know you cannot change it, get out of it. Don't make money on the deaths of children. Just play a good game, that's all. Play in your area at what you are doing now, but resolve to play it with all you've got. The greater your integrity is, making your life complete and balanced in all areas, the more fun life is going to be. It's really simple.

You are probably among the few people who understand that beliefs are not facts. I know that is true for you if you understand *Secrets of Enlightenment*. Don't forget to teach your children this valuable way of thinking. A child's education should be started no later than six months of age to balance all areas of their life that are under their control. Most of us are not aware of how to give babies a full education, but information is available at [www.gentlerevolution.com](http://www.gentlerevolution.com). They then should begin to learn that beliefs are not necessarily the truth. Beliefs might be truth, but they might not be.

### **Developing an Effective Therapy**

If you happen to be in a mental therapy practice of some kind, you might give some thought to basing a new therapy on the principles given here, or adding to an existing therapy using these principles. The most important chapters would be Chapter 5 through 9 plus Chapter 19 on *Acceptance and Healing*. Such a therapy would discuss with the Player the opinions and ideas of the drama he has chosen to live, and might help give him a better path to follow.

In cases where the Player is happy with his present path, no matter how terrible it might be, he will not change. Remember, the worse off a psychopath may be, the more dramatic he might find it, in which case it satisfies his sense of drama and he will not change until such time as his sense of drama changes. In every case it will be more a matter of educating a patient in some way. Of course, any really good therapy will help if you can get the person to want help. And if the person does not want help, it may be difficult to re-educate him about his sense of drama.



## 11. False Rewards

A Player of the game may become a god, reach Nirvana, “enter into the light,” or become an “OT” (a Scientology term for a god), or any number of other things, but the Player is already these things and infinitely more, and cannot be otherwise.

All the philosophies and religions promise some kind of reward. *Secrets of Enlightenment* only points out that all rewards you receive will come from you. All religions and philosophies are part of the game of this universe, the game of drama. Although their rewards may seem great, heaven, Nirvana, etc. are all within this universe and thus are only a part of the matrix. They all exist within the matrix. There are a number of heavens I would assume. I’m sure we have all been to a number of them, if not all.

If you are reading this book, I’m sure you are not buying into the idea that there is only one religion. There are hundreds of religions if we include the variations of the religions we know about. Either they each have their own heaven or none of them do. In any case, let’s hope that none of these heavens are the way they have been described by the religions. Can you imagine sitting at the feet of God for eternity? Let’s be practical about this. There hasn’t been a single heaven described that I would care a twit about.

One could stay there only so long and then boredom would set in. You would arrive in heaven, wherever it might be, with the same mind, the same hates and irritations, and the same likes. You might say, “Well, God is going to give us all a new mind that doesn’t have prejudices, and hates, and irritations. We will all be happy all the time and we will never hate.”

In that case, why didn’t God do that to begin with? Why didn’t he start us off with one of those perfect minds? If he had done that, there wouldn’t have been any hate and wars and murder. Our old minds would be gone—the ones that God currently has us on Earth developing so we can come to live with him. So, he

may not give us a new mind after all, if we perfect the one we have.

The rewards that are promised after death and on the next plane are part of an illusion. If that is the game you are playing, then go for it, but don't be confused by any of those promises. Their extent doesn't matter since no one can change another person's mind. Only you can change your mind. Going to heaven, reaching Nirvana, reaching the next plane, ascending, going into the light, graduating to a higher level of heaven, or moving across town—none of these things can change a Player's condition or happiness level. Arriving in heaven would make one happier for about a week. That's usually less time than one stays happy after moving to a new city or going on a vacation.

When the Player arrives "there," he still has the same mind and is still the same person. Only the Player changes his condition with his choices and decisions. It is impossible for another being, Player or God, to change someone's mind, or to bestow happiness. And nobody can go to some other place like heaven and find happiness. No matter where the Player has graduated to, he will always bring his own happiness with him and it will be determined by his integrity. There are places called heaven and paradise, but anyone who arrives in any of those places still has his same mind. They don't hand you a new mind when you get there.



Many people have said, "If only I were rich, I would be happy." I have been privileged to know a few people who have become rich after being poor. None of them found happiness by getting money. Arriving in heaven would have the same non-effect. A person will have the same prejudices and same hates and unhappiness that he has had all along. If these things get changed, it will be because he changed them, but that doesn't require residence in heaven.

From my memory, or at least what I believe is my memory, of past lives and in-between lives, where we go at death depends on the game we are playing. Stated in terms of religion, it depends on our beliefs. Wherever it is, people soon tire of the less dense planes and return to the more solid planes of Earth and the Galaxy.

This is where the real games are. When a Player decides to leave the game of drama, and has met the required conditions, he returns to eternity. In eternity there is nothing: no rewards, no penalties. Penalties and rewards are inside the game. Once outside the game, we can see it was simply a game we were playing. Think of a football game: when the player walks off the field, the game is over. The only thing left is his satisfaction with himself. Even if he didn't win, but played a great game, he will be happy. And if he cheated, he will think somewhat less of himself. Within the game, happiness and all the positive emotions, which are desirable, are obtained by the integrity one maintains within the game.

The undesirable emotions are obtained by a failure of integrity. If one believes in a religion or philosophy, then one tries to work within that framework, but all those promises given are false in that only you will reward yourself. If you know that you have done right within the particular belief system you are practicing, you will allow yourself to go to heaven or whatever those beliefs dictate. However, when you arrive there, it will still be no better than you make it.

In the case of a bad religion, following its practices will not bring rewards or happiness, because you always know what is right and what is wrong. A religion may convince you that some bad act is right, but you always know deep in yourself what the truth is. If you hurt someone because of a religious belief, there is always retribution for what you have done and you can never totally fool yourself about it, no matter how hard you try.

In my opinion, there are very few who can stand those wonderful places for very long. The real games are here. There are smaller religions and other beliefs that are so small that an

afterlife game never got put in place, so if you are in one of them, you may be a little confused to find nothing in your afterlife. Such people usually wander around for a while until they just happen to be drawn to a new baby body. It's a little confusing to them, but they usually come through OK, as far as I know.

Those few of us who do not have beliefs or religions and philosophies don't go anywhere at death. We wander around for a while and then take a new baby body. The body that we take depends on what we are willing to reward ourselves with within the game that we are familiar with. If our integrity is high, we will find a pretty good body in a pretty good area. If our integrity has suffered, we will find a less desirable situation, depending upon how much we are penalizing ourselves.

The only person who ever penalizes you is yourself. It's all part of the game. In the final analysis, games that have real rewards are much more satisfying than the false games with false rewards. Many of the religions promise that their worshipers will attain eternity. But all Players already have eternity and cannot keep from having it. They will exist after the end of this universe. They will exist for eternity. But the rewards of all the religions and beliefs cannot exist beyond the end of the universe.

All games are within this universe, are conducted within the rules of this universe, and end at the end of this universe. No Player would have any use for them beyond this universe. When the ball players walk off of the playing field, the game has ended.

The best game is to simply play the game of life. One of the real future rewards that you get is to have a better world next lifetime. If you have helped make a better world, you can then reap the benefits of a better world, and that is a true reward. You can claim many of your rewards in this same life. You work toward a better life, and you finally achieve it. These are true rewards. As you work for a greater world, you are putting better and greater recordings into your mind. Those recordings will

influence your thinking in future lives, and thus your future rewards.

You study hard and work hard in school and finally you achieve an education, which is another real reward. The higher your integrity in doing your school work, the better your education (which means the better your reward). The rewards for good integrity and penalties for low integrity, or, to put it more simply, the rewards for being good and the penalties for being bad, are all built into the game and you are the referee.

No one escapes the rewards and penalties, and it seems that few understand them, but it is simple and totally obvious. The gang member who picks up a gun becomes nervous; when he points it at someone, he becomes agitated, and when he pulls the trigger, his whole world changes. He must always look over his shoulder. He must live in a world that will probably never again be safe. It is a world of terror and sudden death. His happiness level will always be low. He is lucky if he is caught and prosecuted; otherwise, his whole life moves along in the same vein.



On the other hand, should the same man join a gang and see that it is bad, he might quit. Should he then move away and find a job somewhere else, avoid gun use and other things that the gang would have him do, he avoids a life of terror and death and fear. If his integrity is fairly high, he might begin to study and do a good job at work. He will look after all the areas of his life and soon have a wife and a reasonable life. The rewards and punishments are all there. We get what we create.

The man who comes home and treats his wife well receives a great deal in return, and the man who comes home and beats his wife also has a return, but it is not the same. The person who does not clean up his house lives in a dirty house. The person who creates a beautiful front yard has a pleasing yard to

admire. The person who bullies a child begins to lose his self-respect and begins to think that he is less than those he bullies.

Those who create hell live in it. Those who create paradise live in that. No one escapes rewards and punishment. They are built into the game and administered by the Player himself. You may ask, "What about those who benefit from stealing or seem to benefit from being mean?" You cannot know their mind, but under therapy, these people finally find out that they ruined their lives with that behavior. And for those who do not admit such things, an outsider to their life can easily see where they are much less well off and suffering from their creations.

So what if a person is very good and still receives bad things? Well, you have to look at past lives as well as this one, but people always create their own condition, their happiness, rewards, and penalties. The rewards and penalties are always there instantly, but there may be more in the future also, in this life or future lives. When I say *instantly*, it is as simple as the person who doesn't clean his back yard lives with a dirty back yard. The God that punishes you or rewards you is **you**. You always get what you create. The dirty back yard is a good example. If you create it, you have it.

This is true even for those who live in Africa. No doubt they were there last life and didn't do too well at that time. If they feel they deserve a better life next time, they will move and find a better place. If they feel that they don't deserve a better life, they will stay. But they may also decide to make a game of creating a better country.

The problem is that all these people need help from birth at least up to six years old. They need to learn what a better life really is. They need to understand life and almost none of them do because of the teachings that exist there now. Your actions, rewards and punishment, and other aspects of life depend upon what you know and understand of life. One of the jobs for those who know about better lives is to teach those who do not know. They may have known in the past, but if they don't know in this lifetime, they will need some help. But that is the way it

goes. We have had help in the past when we needed it and, if we can help someone now, returning the favor will also help us along.



## 12. Who the Players Are

I want to explain who the players are before I discuss the way they came to be and how God came to be. Chapter 16 gives details of creation and of God. You might think that knowing those things is impossible, but who says so? Take a few minutes and decide if it is logical or not.

Being the person you are, and having read this far, you probably already knew many of the things I am telling you. If you didn't already know most of it, you would probably have stopped reading already. You may have a good idea who the Players are. The Players are all perfect, infinite gods. They cannot be otherwise, for only infinite gods can play this game of drama. This universe is not infinite—it has a beginning and an end. But the Players exist in eternity and they are infinite in eternity.

Players are not made of space, time, energy, or matter. Those are the things of this universe, which is a game existing in eternity. Although it exists in eternity, it is not eternal. It has a beginning and an end. When an infinite God enters this universe, he creates a mind that contains the agreements of this universe, and he uses that mind to compute and think about this universe within the agreements of the game of drama.

This is how I see it. If I'm wrong, I'm wrong, and you can send me an email saying, "You don't know what you're talking about." However, I have as good a chance of figuring it out as anyone and better chance than most. I remember at least 100 lifetimes, and I remember the story of Earth and I have been working on finding these answers for most of that time. I hope you don't think that finding the Miracle Mineral Supplement now called *Master Mineral Solution* was just some sort of big accident?

The Master Mineral Solution is a solution that cures 98 percent of humanity's diseases. It exists and is working in many countries today and you can read more in Chapter 27, *MMS*.

The matter of this universe appears to be solid because there is an agreement in the Player's mind: he agrees that matter is solid. There are agreements to all the rules of this universe. There are agreements on centrifugal force, light, and something like twelve primary laws of gravity; and then 180 secondary agreements that science tries to uncover by looking at—not our agreements, but the **results** of our agreements. The universe (the game of drama) is the result of all the rules we know and many more that we don't yet know. It is the result of the rules in God's mind which is also our mind. Other universes could be created and agreed upon, but this is the one we have now.

A spirit is an entity that is not made of the things of this universe: matter, energy, space, or time. A spirit has no weight and no energy (but can create energy), and no location in space or time except to the extent he agrees that he is in space or time. If he knew how to change the agreements in his mind, he could be anywhere in this universe. But he is here now and playing the game from this location.

In the terms of this universe, a spirit is nothing, but we really don't know a lot about nothing. It is not empty space, as that is not nothing. Do you see? We have to be nothing since we existed before this universe did. We (God) created this universe, so obviously we are not made of the things of this universe. One cannot change, or hurt, or do anything to nothing. However, we created a mind that can be changed. Your mind can be changed or hurt to the extent that you agree it is changed or hurt. That's all. No more than that. But we usually go along with the rules and agreements of this universe.

So who are the Players?

- The Players are the spirits I just described who are playing the game of this universe.

## **The Players**

A Player is here for the fun of it or the joy of it. If he becomes upset, it is only because the mind that he created when he entered this universe is upset. The Player can decide at any time to not be upset. He may continue to be upset because he thinks he must, since he is following the rules of the game—or he can become un-upset at any time he chooses. Or he can allow his mind to be upset while he merely observes it and goes along with the game.

The Players agree to see what everyone else sees. Thus, when we look at a table, we see it because we have agreed to the mechanism that allows us to see a table. We agree that it is made of billions of tiny atoms with electrons spinning around



the nucleus and we agree to all the rules that say that bundles of energy called photons speed out through space and hit the table and bounce back to our eyes, and that these bundles of energy can influence the particles in our optical nerves. It's all a game that God is playing a Disneyland for God. Within this universe, there is space only because God (again, that's us) agrees that such a thing as space exists. Outside this universe, there is no space, only eternity. Do you think another universe exists somewhere else, maybe a distance from this one? That would mean there is space

outside this universe. No:

- The tens or hundreds or thousands of other universes that might exist **exist as agreements only**.

They do not exist in a space at all. The agreements create the space in which they exist, but that is nowhere. The space only exists because the Players agree to pretend it exists. Each universe only exists because the Players there (viewpoints of God) have made up that particular game and associated rules.

The Players (viewpoints) outside the games are gods or are God. Both ideas are correct. They exist in eternity. They cannot be less than perfect as there is no way to be less than what they are. Only the characters they pretend to be in the games they play are less than perfect, because they pretend they are less than perfect as a result of Rule 8, which says all things in this universe must have a cause. (Please see Chapter 8 for more.)

Outside this universe there is only eternity, nothing else. There is no way to evaluate a god against eternity. The infinite God is not made of anything. He is nothing, and nothing cannot be less than nothing. Being less than nothing is impossible.

Therefore, we are not here to learn lessons or teach ourselves lessons unless we need to learn lessons about this universe, and that can be totally true. But we made up all the rules for this universe about good and evil and all that. So as part of the game, we can continue to learn about the game and the rules we made for this game and we can become enlightened (that is, we can come to know most of the rules and to know who we really are) about this game and still play it.

The Players are people of high integrity who usually play the game where they happen to be with much joy, or fun, or enthusiasm. They can become upset and have problems, but they are above murder and most other criminal activities; also they do not create wars or other mass evil activities. If they are involved in a war, it is to prevent as much death and suffering as possible. They might be generals, and, once the war is created by others, they can take part in order to prevent some of the death and suffering.

### **The Pawns**

But there are those who, because of poor choices, wind up upset and not understanding their situation, and they become so involved in the game that they are less and less able to play it. They eventually exist passively in this universe, creating nothing. They are the Pawns.

## The Pieces

The Pieces exist mainly to stop things that have been created by the Players. But the game gets complex. As you may have heard, governments are best at the time of their creation, and if freedom exists, it is at that time. From that point on, the Pieces seek to stop the government. They tend to make their game the game of stopping the government. Law after law is generated and slowly the government grinds to a halt. Nowadays, few governments can last much longer than 200 years. For the most part, when a government is destroyed, it is from within. The Pieces are generally destructive. Please see Chapter 13 for more on the Pieces.

So, the secret is to play whatever game you find to be fun, but remember the rules about integrity. Integrity means everything. It means the whole of it. Look up the word in a dictionary. The better you maintain integrity, the more fun the game becomes, and being a humanitarian is all part of integrity. So maintain perfection in all areas and you will have integrity.



## 13. The Pawns and Pieces

Only Players can think outside the game and grasp the concept of pretended cause (see Chapter 8, *The Second Lie*) and of all the other concepts given here, especially those in Chapter 29 on religion. Most people are Pieces, and do not grasp it.

I like to compare the current game on Earth to a chess game with a few different rules. Of course, the game has been broken for thousands of years, but that has not kept people from continuing to play it. There are Pawns, Pieces, Demon Pieces, and Players.



### Pawns

Pawns make up 98 percent of humanity. They believe anything they are told by “authority,” unconditionally accepting them as facts. They are the ones who accept doctors as being equal to gods. They question nothing that comes from authority. For millennia, they have been cannon fodder and have died by the millions on battle fields around the world. The present game on Earth depends on Pawns since someone has to die in the wars. In the last hundred years, they have also died by the millions in medical hospitals under doctors’ care.

Pawns merely exist. They have jobs and they watch television most of the time. The more educated and affluent ones like to travel. They are the looky-loos of the world. They travel and look. They can make money, but that’s nothing unless they do something worthwhile with it. The main thing is that they create nothing of value. They do nothing of value. They are all certain that they were created by something or someone—of course, that means by God.

### Pieces

Pieces are not much improvement over the Pawns. They seldom question anything coming from authority, and mostly they are authority. On the chess board, they are the castles (rooks), knights, and bishops. In life, they are corporate executives, United Nations leaders, presidents, and Congress members. They seldom, if ever, question the authority over them. But Pieces have a different god: money. They are ruled by money throughout the world.

Their job is mainly to stop things. They use taxes as one method and they work with rules created by people above them, mostly Demon Pieces, to stop as much as they can. They are destroying society through various methods of controlling money.

### **Demon Pieces**

Demon Pieces are in the positions they are in because **they have no conscience**. I call them Demon because of that very thing. They are the super-rich. They see nothing wrong with accumulating billions and trillions of dollars while children die by the thousands from not having enough water to live. They see nothing wrong with financing both sides of a war that they created. They see nothing wrong with taking trillions of dollars from people by fooling them about their health. Even Bill Gates, who became super-rich with a legitimate enterprise, uses his billions to aid the destructive mechanisms of the other super-rich pieces as he seeks to vaccinate all the children of Africa, which will cause much suffering and death.

Pawns and Pieces are people who can think only within the game and thus would not understand most of the concepts in this book. They are, in almost every case, certain that they were created by someone or something, and that is true. But it wasn't God. It was their parents—not on purpose, of course, but they were created to be Pieces and Pawns. If you think otherwise, look at the 40-plus wars now in progress on Earth. They are all examples of Pieces gone wild following the orders of the Demon Pieces. Players never sink so low. As I write these pages, the Serbs are out killing and burning complete

villages in the province of Kosovo. They are taking whole families out and shooting them. The Russian government is protesting the US actions and the Russian people are angry and hate us for trying to stop the Serbs. The Russians are, in effect, saying, "The Serbs are our friends, so it is OK for them to kill the people of Kosovo."

Of course, there is a lot more to it than just what we see. No war happens unless someone stands to gain. That is pretty much a rule by the Demon Pieces. More than half a million people were "cleansed" in the Congo several years ago, but no one tried to stop that atrocity. The right people did not stand to gain from its cessation. Sorry, but Players never sink so low. The Pieces are not and cannot be infinite gods (actually, they are but they do not act like it) who have come here to play in a Disneyland. The Pieces and Pawns can never rise or think above the game, but Players often do.



Wars are created by Demon Pieces, which are the Kings and Queens on the chess board, and the Pieces and Pawns follow along, with the Pawns having no choice in the matter. They are the ones who go and die by the millions. The Pieces were created in the image of the Players (the image of God) and are subject to the same rules, and to a great extent have the same characteristics as Players. However, they have a great deal less control over the mind than Players, and are thus pushed into doing terrible things when their emotions are manipulated by Demon Pieces. They are often concerned only with things on the negative side, and although they are almost always religious, they have no concept of spirituality. (Spirituality is not a religious thing.)

Only Demon Pieces make war, as Pieces and Pawns are generally people of good will. Only Players grasp the concept that beliefs are not necessarily proven facts. Pieces and Pawns do not grasp that concept, which has made them willing to kill

one another for thousands of years. The Pieces believed in communism. More than 110 million people were killed in pursuit of a political philosophy that failed.

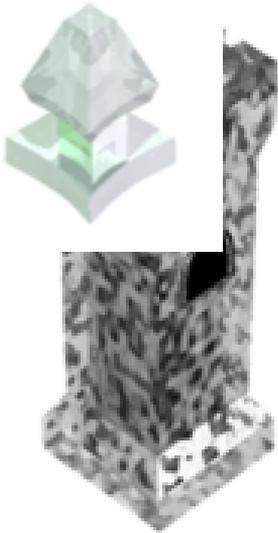
Neither Players nor Pieces and Pawns are willing to kill for something that is not proven, but Pieces and Pawns think their beliefs are proven. Adult Pieces and Pawns cannot understand the concept that their beliefs might not be proven facts, but adult Players can grasp this concept instantly. There are very few Players on Earth at this time: less than 1 Player per 100,000 people.

The main test of whether a person is a Player is:

- Can he understand that beliefs are not proven facts?

In theory, anyone on Earth can understand that idea, as it is obvious that many beliefs are not true. The question is whether you can live it? No religious people can. They believe that their beliefs, all their religious concepts, are the truth. Except for a rare few, New Age people also cannot understand that their beliefs might not be the truth. The same is true for Republicans and Democrats. They're convinced that their beliefs are truth.

If you believe that religious people are more than Pieces and Pawns, look at how they have been killing one another for thousands of years. Players will fight and kill when they have to, but they never start wars, they never murder, and they never torture. If a Player is a military general, he is in that position to prevent bloodshed and get the war over as soon as possible. Players can have terrible problems and can do stupid things, and can teach themselves lessons about terrible things with much physical and mental pain, but they never stoop to starting wars, killing, or torture. While almost always being considered the great men of any age, they are often betrayed. They will kill to protect others and will often shoot first if they feel it is necessary, but, in general, Players are people of peace in any given age.



Hitler and Stalin are examples of Demon Pieces, as are the entire Illuminati. They had (or have) no thought of integrity. In order for Earth to be saved from destruction in the distant future, children must be taught to understand that belief does not constitute proof. It cannot be taught to adult Pieces. Peace on Earth will only be possible when a large group of influential people understand that beliefs are not proof. The only way we will be able to get to that point is to teach children, which will take several hundred years. This will only happen when Players take enough

responsibility in seeing that children are taught correctly; currently, they are not doing that. If you are a Player, you already know you have lived before, and that you will live again. If the wars are gone when you return to Earth, it will be a much more pleasant place.

### **How are Pieces Created?**

The answer is easy enough. All humanity has to do is just destroy the minds of its children. Basically, a Piece is created by taking a baby and destroying its mind with continual lies and deception between birth and six years of age (or perhaps 10 years of age). All people on Earth currently do this, with the result that there are lots of Pieces but very few Players. Children are taught Santa Claus and the Easter Bunny, and few children are given any truth for the first 6–10 years of their lives.

Nature set the human brain to accept data from its parents up to about six years of age, and, during this time, the child does not evaluate incoming data. Nature expected this data would be evaluated by the child's parents before it was passed on to the child. After being stocked with all kinds of false data for 6–10 years, the brain changes (ask any doctor). The child then starts

to evaluate incoming data against the data already stored in his mind. Can you imagine how a brain can evaluate new data against the Tooth Fairy, Santa Claus, and children's stories on television?

That is how Pieces and Pawns are created: make sure they have no truth with which to evaluate new data. How can a mind filled with fairy tales evaluate the correct treatment of anything? You can't destroy the ability to think in the citizens of Earth and expect to have a civilization of thinking people. If our civilization had more people who could think, wars and other atrocities might be prevented. This mind destruction is not done on purpose by our parents. It was started thousands of years ago by those who wished at that time to destroy the human race, and each generation passes it on. And it was also set as mental implants in the minds of people, but that story is told in the next book.

When we destroy our children's minds between birth and 10 years old, we are doing more than just ruining their lives for this lifetime—we are destroying their future for hundreds or even thousands of years to come.

Please see Chapter 29 on *Religions: The False Games*. Like it or not, Players are responsible for Pieces. It is up to the Players to make Earth a better place, or rather, to see that it becomes better. A God, or a painter, a musician, a carpenter, or a machinist is responsible for his creations. The religious people have it 180 degrees backwards.

- Creations are never responsible to their creator.

God is responsible to his creations for how he made them and the problems they are having. The creator made them the way they are, regardless of the argument that he gave them free will. Their conditions or actions cannot be their fault if that were actually the way it is.

Players are responsible for Pieces because Pieces simply cannot be responsible for themselves. Players are responsible for people because they are the only ones on Earth capable of

taking responsibility. They must work to see that people do not suffer unduly. Only when the Players really take responsibility for Earth's conditions will there be a chance of peace and a really decent civilization. There is no one else who can take responsibility but Players.

On rare occasions, Pieces graduate to become Players. This is possible. The Piece simply increases his integrity and thus his responsibility level, thus increasing his connection to God. That is to say, his feeling of oneness with God increases and his ability to love self increases, and his confidence increases. In fact, an increase in integrity means an increase in all other positive attributes. And the same thing is true with Players – as their integrity increases, their oneness with themselves (God) increases.

### **Pawns, Pieces, and MMS**

MMS (Master Miracle Solution) which heals most of humanity's diseases, began be used in the year 2000. It has now been used by nearly 10 million people throughout the world, and I personally have treated more than 5000 people while in Africa.



Pieces and Pawns are the ones who become critics of MMS and try to fight it. Pieces often fight it because they know their bosses (Demon Pieces) would want them to do that. So we see the FDA putting out lies against MMS. I have approached a couple of generals that I knew personally, and none have ever been against MMS, but a few have said that they will not be able to officially accept it because they cannot go against their civilian bosses. In one other case, the top-ranking general of a foreign country simply began to use MMS. Hundreds of doctors have accepted it also. Players accept MMS by merely seeing the chemistry and logic, whereas Pieces start the standard rhetoric of "Where are the papers showing clinical trials and double-blind tests?"

Of course, not all Pieces or Pawns fight MMS—the majority of them don't.

All the MMS critics are simply Pieces without the ability to think or even understand that one should be able to think. They don't ask questions or listen to new data. They start talking off the tops of their heads without checking a thing. At some time during their lives, they were told or they heard that “chlorine” is poisonous and dangerous, so without thinking or evaluating, they immediately brand MMS as poisonous because it has the word “chlorine” in its name (chlorine dioxide). They don't consider that table salt has chlorine in it and it is not poisonous.

Then from that point on, they write articles about how poisonous MMS is. They check no data. There are many of them. They simply make decisions and choices without data and they have no personal responsibility or integrity. The critics in combination are responsible for thousands of people continuing to suffer and die because they believe these critics. Integrity would dictate that the MMS critics should study and understand MMS before writing about it.

They don't realize it, but their lies will eventually work against them and will come back to bite them. As an example, let's say a critic gets cancer. Normally he might check around looking for something that would help him. He might have even found MMS. But he has written articles saying how MMS is evil, so how can he go against his own articles? He will probably go to the medical establishment and have surgery, radiation and/or chemotherapy, and suffer untold misery and pain even to death, because he cannot go against his own writings.

Eventually, Players will take enough responsibility to change things on Earth and that is already well underway. We are not waiting for gods to come, or for some sort of change in the spirit of humanity, or for teachers to arrive from outer space, or a hundred other things. We are taking responsibility for changing Earth. Earth will be saved and it will be because the people of Earth saved it. We took responsibility instead of continuously talking about how rescue will come from others or from some

special change. It's special all right. The people of Earth are doing it.



## 14. The Greatest Secret

Man's greatest secret we cannot tell  
For in our minds it is buried too well;  
Buried so deep we cannot know  
The evil that lies there to grow—  
It's the secret that creates our Hell.

It's a secret that all men do share;  
It's held in place by those who care;  
This secret has not been known  
Since the sands of time have blown;  
We must find the secret if we dare.

Man must have a God on high  
Who created the Earth and the sky,  
A God whose power is beyond compare,  
A God who knows all that is there;  
He must be one who never does die.

This secret, I am afraid,  
Is one that man has made;  
It hides what he should know  
And creates the guilt that hurts him so  
And thus he continues the masquerade.

This powerful God that must save our soul

Has a plan for you and me, I'm told;  
He has a plan for the Earth as well;  
Each day he sends more souls to Hell  
And the loss of humans goes untold.

But here's one secret from eternity:  
God is man and man is God, you see.  
This secret is so vast  
That man has hidden it in the past;  
When known, it can set us free.

The powerful God that is on high  
By man was created in the sky;  
He was created with power so great,  
He can never be stopped, even by fate  
And no one noticed the lie.

Now listen, my friend, and you shall hear  
Of the true purpose of the God we fear:  
So long as we think he is responsible, you see,  
Man will never be free  
From the evil that costs us so dear.

A time will come when man will say,  
It was I who made it this way  
And it is I who must fix this evil for man,  
For there is no one else who can;

And the imagined God will no longer stay.

So the biggest secret in eternity  
Is that man is God and it sets us free

To know that man is not a slave  
to a deity,

Then man alone can plan to be,  
And of course, that's you and me.



The Greatest Secret of all time, kept secret from mankind, has remained hidden for millennia. It is also mankind's greatest wish, and its opposite is mankind's greatest fear. No matter what continent, country, or tribe, the greatest universally shared secret desire of mankind is the desire to **not** be responsible for this universe. It's the desire to have some God or some higher being in charge, with power so great that one cannot possibly consider opposing it.

Built within this desire to not be responsible is the wish to have someone else or something else be responsible for one's life and for the kind of game one is playing in this life. It's the desire to know that someone else already has a plan for one's life. It is the desire to be able to worship some higher being who is responsible for this universe and who is calling the shots. It's the desire to feel safe in this universe, to wake up in the morning and know that things are going according to the plan of a God or some higher being that is so powerful that his plans cannot be thwarted by any power in this universe. In this case, one can feel safe and secure knowing that this God is in control.

People must believe that their responsibility lies only in doing what God wants them to do. People want and need to believe that they have no responsibility beyond fulfilling the desires of

some all-powerful God or ultimate spiritual being. This is the reason why all humanity's religions currently exist.

The most important part of mankind's secret is the most hidden:

- There is built deep within the consciousness of man a tremendous guilt.

This guilt is so powerful that it rules most of mankind and the pain of it is so intense that people have refused to confront it for millions of years. The guilt has determined man's path and condition on Earth since he first arrived here. No one escapes this guilt, and not one out of a thousand confronts it, but there are those who try.



This guilt is what keeps humanity from greatness. It keeps us in the mud and unable to reach to the stars and beyond. It keeps us out hunting squirrel when we should be walking across the surface of Mars. It keeps us playing a game of golf when we should be traveling a hundred times the speed of light out towards the star of Alpha Centauri or the Andromeda Galaxy. This guilt is what keeps people arguing over the difference between Democrat and Republican ideas when they should be building the greatest civilization

the Galaxy has ever known.

People realize on a less-than-conscious level that they are responsible for all the evil and things going bad on Earth. They realize that they are responsible for all the suffering and torture, wars, pain, and disease, because not only are they doing nothing to stop these things, but also they are actually creating them.

We know that we should be doing something to stop the evil, but we refuse to confront that reality. Thus, the closer that man comes to realizing his responsibility, the greater the pain of guilt

becomes, and thus he refuses to face any responsibility along these lines.

Humanity has accepted a God given to us from the distant past that has total control over all things good and evil, and this accepted God is so much more powerful than us that we have no power at all in comparison. Thus we do not need to feel guilty about allowing 3000 children to die of malaria each day, or about allowing 3000 more children to die each day because they do not have clean water to drink. Or about the millions more who die of AIDS or live in poverty. Man negates his guilt by saying that it's all part of God's plan.

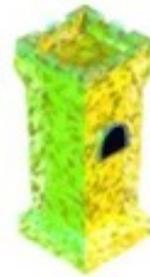
It isn't that people literally sit back and say, "Oh, it's all part of God's plan." It's far beyond that now. It's just a nice comfortable idea that exists in people's minds that it is all God's plan, and this idea is only slightly less hidden than the guilt. The idea that God created it all just sits there covering the guilt that people otherwise would feel. They go to church wearing beautiful new clothes and do nothing while thousands suffer to death in other parts of the world. People simply enjoy themselves, live it up on Saturday and go to church on Sunday, while seldom considering others not so lucky. Each trip to church is another dose of "I'm not responsible for anything; God made it all."

The guilt is hidden so deep and covered with so many layers of claims such as, "Well, I have to live my life," that people refuse to admit that such guilt exists, and they never confront it. It's there, but people refuse to admit it or consider it. It's not that we think of it in the front of our mind. We don't hold the thought in our minds at all. The knowledge that we are not responsible is so comforting that we almost bury the guilt but not quite. It sits there just one level below our belief that God has a plan.

The problem with God's plan is that it has resulted in tremendous suffering for mankind rather than in any improvements. The road of self-deprivation and search for truth and enlightenment is the road of many spiritual searchers, but it is simply a search for someone other than self to be responsible. In fact, enlightenment for most men is simply the

road to becoming a slave to some higher being. It is the road of suppressing one's own desires in order to find out what the higher being wants of them and then doing those things. The road to enlightenment is, in many cases, the most debased of all paths.

If you are God, you must accept responsibility for that and then begin fixing things. If a person puts away all of his own desires and follows the desires of some higher god, it is the worst of all slavery. He can never escape, for he is trapped by his own beliefs. The extremely important point here is that as long as we insist on being slaves to some higher power or being or god, we will never be able to pull ourselves out of the mud. We can escape a certain amount of guilt, but that path won't always be open to us. If we follow the God path, things will continue to deteriorate until no civilization is left and nothing but a burned-out planet remains. The path to not accepting responsibility is always downwards towards hell. Our imaginary God will never be able to save us, because the fact is, there is no one there.



We are supposed to say that we can't get anywhere without God. We are supposed to bow and kneel and scrape, telling God how it is all his doing if we succeed in some small way. We are supposed to give him all the credit for the good things and hopefully we can blame the devil for the bad things. So again, we don't have to be responsible for anything. Are you beginning to recognize the majority of humanity? Do you see the characteristics of the Pieces more clearly? Do you understand the natural law that exists here? **When no one takes responsibility, things can only degrade. They cannot get better.**

Children, once they are brought up with a belief that makes them not responsible for peace on Earth, or anything else, cannot be re-educated. This is especially true of the children of the Pieces. Players can be re-educated sometimes, but Pieces cannot. They will maintain that their only responsibility is to the

higher being that they have been taught to worship. They are, for the most part, slaves from beginning to end. Being a slave to God is no better than being a slave to anyone else. Pieces have been the “cannon fodder” through the centuries. They have run off to war century after century and died by the millions on battlefields all over the world. This will never change unless the Players begin to change the game to more and more logical reasoning—the Pieces simply can’t do that.

You may wonder about this, but think a while longer. For more than 100 years, Pieces have been running to medical doctors with their incurable diseases. Just with cancer alone, more than 7 million people worldwide a year allow themselves to be tortured to death at tremendous expense. The doctors offer no hope. Once chemo or radiation therapy begins, the AMA and official statistics offer no more than a 3 percent chance of living five years for most kinds of fatal cancer. Three percent—that’s nothing. You have a better chance of living with less pain if you do nothing. Yet millions suffer to death with no questions. With more than 100 known cures for cancer, a 7 million cancer patients nevertheless die without even wondering if these god-like doctors really know what they are doing. Do you doubt that Pieces exist? This is no different than the cannon fodder. Did I say that right? Did you get that? Seven million cancer patients die each year while under the care of a medical doctor. And nobody questions it.

If you bow and scrape and say that only someone else knows what is right and wrong for you, you are a slave with no will of your own. Most highly religious and highly spiritual people think that God talks to them. The problem with that is that many terrible things have been and are still done by those who think God talks to them.

- The only way you can truly be responsible is to be responsible to what you know to be good, not what you think your God wants, or even what you think you hear your God saying.

As long as you are being responsible to some other god than yourself, you will always get it wrong.

So let me point out the obvious. Many of these Pieces have other gods than the religious God.

- For many, the government is their god, or equal with God.
- For many others, the scientific community or scientific method is their god,
- For yet others, the universities are their god.

Anything that you consider powerful and right and that you cannot in anyway control is your god.

In reality, you are God, and as long as you deny that, you deny your own identity and your own power. No book, no man in the sky, no non-communicative being will always keep you straight, because your responsibility is always diluted by someone else. Only when you are totally responsible for your own actions and your own plans and no one else is telling you what to do or calling the shots, will you be totally sure that you will get it right. That doesn't mean that you cannot agree with others to follow some good plan. But when you dilute your power, you fail. You have to get it right by your own power and not from the fear of punishment from some imagined God.

The fact is, you are not a slave and there is no reason to make yourself a slave. There is no reason to suppress your own desires. Do what you know is right. It is good to educate yourself, and, in educating yourself, it is good to ask advice, but let nobody's advice distract you from doing what you know is best. Your free will keeps you from being a slave. Don't then make a slave of yourself. And don't then think you are going to get truth from a University.

As soon as people begin to take responsibility for the conditions on Earth and begin to solve the problems that confront us, such as disease, and poverty, and war, then they can begin to sit back and approve of themselves. They will find that being a

slave to an imagined God is no longer necessary to gloss over their guilt for doing nothing. Until then, however, nothing will ever get done and war will continue to be spread throughout Earth as long as people continue to put the responsibility for the conditions on Earth on anything other than themselves. I am really, really sorry, but no one is coming to help us. We will have to do it all ourselves.

Please, please, don't fall for the idea that any God can hand you freedom or free will and then walk off saying that he is no longer responsible for you. That is something that not even a God can do. The creator is always responsible for his creations, and that cannot be undone. The fact that you are God, and that you created yourself, is the only reason that you can have free will. There is no other way to obtain free will. Like it or not, the created object, person or thing, is always as the creator created it. It cannot be any other way.

There is absolutely no credence to the idea that God can give you free will, and then tell you that if you exercise it in any way except how he allows, he will send you to Hell. That would be like giving you free will with one hand and taking it away with the other. He cannot say, "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy strength, and with thy entire mind," and then threaten to send you to Hell if you don't. That cannot possibly be free will. You can call it free will and pretend it's free will, but once again, that is Santa Claus logic.

The justification was at first only to overcome guilt, but it spread to the justification of anger and fear and of other negative emotions. People could not always easily justify bad things that they had done to overcome their guilt, and thus they began inventing various lies to overcome some of the guilt. From this, hundreds of kinds of demons and gods and good and bad entities were created in people's minds. At first, they were to justify various things that people had done, and eventually they were to justify actions that they were going to do. It was all driven by the desire to explain various unexplainable things or to not feel guilty.

For many centuries, people created hundreds of kinds of demons and gods to justify their actions. Other deities were created to simply explain unexplained phenomena. Many were passed down from generation to generation, and the need to justify bad actions was the main reason for the longevity of demons and gods. These gods and demons were not particularly man's friends. They often got angry with man, but they were always a good justification for one thing or another.

Finally on earth, only a few thousand years ago, a new kind of god was invented. It was a single God that was responsible for everything in the universe. This God was also a personal God, for he directed the path of each person. He had a plan for everyone. He handled guilt better than any God that previously existed. Before that, there were many Gods, with each God being responsible for only one or two things. But now here was a God that was totally responsible for everything and completely all-powerful. Anyone who believed in this God never again had to worry about guilt or about being responsible for anything. This God took everything on His shoulders. In return, all you had to do was become his slave.

Unfortunately, or maybe fortunately, this mental process never works very well, and the guilt never gets glossed over very well. The extremely irresponsible condition caused by this mental process results in extreme evil. Men who buy into this particular God belief have been killing one another ever since this new mental phenomena God belief first started. The killing has never stopped.

So we live on a planet where the cure for every disease is available, where man produces more than enough to feed every person on earth, where the bounty is almost unbelievable, yet men starve and millions die from diseases and poverty and thousands more are killing one another as you read these lines. And as I have mentioned before, that will



not change until people take responsibility for the conditions on Earth and stop trying to say that some God has a plan, or the New Age is coming, or benevolent beings from outer space are coming, or that the government will fix everything, or certain political plans will fix us.

### **So What Must We All Do?**

If the Players start doing something, it will eventually get done. If you are a Player, just so the guilt doesn't hit you too hard, start doing something towards overcoming evil (that man has created). Increase your commitment towards integrity in your own actions. Do some work towards helping man survive better in this world. Do some volunteer work. Begin telling your children and other people that we can overcome the evil on this planet. Insist that people act with integrity and honesty. Begin doing things towards that end.

Even better than that, become a Minister of Health for the Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing. Heal people for free and accept donations. Your life will change. Your happiness level will rise. Life will become fun. Become responsible for doing some real good. Heal some people who are suffering. With MMS and our seminar, you can heal most of humanity's diseases and you'll enjoy doing it.

The real secret that will allow us to bring peace to Earth and to the Galaxy has remained out of man's grasp for millions of years. It is so simple that it might never have been discovered. On occasion, it has been used, but those who used it did not understand its power. It was discovered after centuries of searching, and it still might be lost again. Let me state it here:

- People's minds must be educated from the first day after birth onward. Babies must learn logical thinking. They must never be lied to or knowingly given untrue data. They must have the equivalent of a college education by the time they are about six years old. Mostly they must understand logical thinking and integrity.

Over 200,000 children have already been taught in this manner and they have IQs from 180 to 220. They never become delinquent, and they do not lose their childhood. They play and have fun like other children. They are truly amazing and one can easily see how, when grown, they can bring about peace on earth. You want to talk about love? These children really love their parents and others but that doesn't mean that they base their logical reasoning on love.

Please read the plan for peace in Chapter 21. Contact us using the email address at the back of this book, and help us work for peace following the plan outlined here. Read what we have already done towards this plan and get involved if you can. If not, get involved in your community and do something for the betterment of mankind. It isn't going to happen if we don't do it. Within the next few years, probably less than 10 years, poverty will begin to make a drastic change because with malaria gone, 500 million people will be able to work who have not so far been able to work. This alone will reduce the amount of killing that takes place in Africa. Many things will begin to change. Our plan is in full swing, but by then it will be more noticeable to the world.

Please understand that all religious groups and all spiritual leaders have taught their followers basically the same lessons. Religions, spiritual teachers, and new philosophies all have the same answers and the same message, which has gone on for thousands of years. The vehicles have varied a bit, but the message remains the same. Basically it is love, and that God's plan will save us. Love is going to solve the problems and will make you do the right thing.

However, love never does solve Earth's problems. The problems since humanity has existed on this Earth have been death and destruction and torture. There is nothing wrong with loving people, but that is not going to do the job. Here in this book, for the first time, is a new message – a practical way to create peace on Earth. Few will listen to it, as the love and God message has always prevailed. Only a rare few people can

raise their vision high enough to accept a practical solution. But there will be enough to make the difference.

Why not help us change the world? It might take as much as 200 years, but it will get much better in as little as 20 years. With more people taking part in changing the world, the need for an all-powerful God that explains away our inaction will decrease. People will begin, very slowly, to treat one another better, because they will realize it is all created by us and it must be improved by us. It will take time, but we can win.

If we don't, then mankind is doomed, because no other group and no other philosophy have ever created a solution. They have all had thousands of years to succeed but there are no successes. Humanity's only salvation lies with a few of us who realize that we must bring understanding to our children with the proper technology. We understand that we must be responsible and that, although love is a great thing, it cannot be the vehicle for saving mankind. We cannot save mankind by creating love and then expecting love to save mankind. But if we create intelligent children with integrity and compassion and understanding, we will then have saved mankind.



## 15. Love

Because love seems to be the biggest single item in religions, this chapter on it follows the chapter on *The Biggest Secret*, that mankind is God. Love is touted as being the greatest of all emotions and all the major religions of Earth preach love in one way or another. It is stated that we must love God and that God loves us. Most philosophies and psychological theories rate love as the greatest thing there is. It is stated in thousands of books and preached from thousands of pulpits that love is our only chance of creating peace on Earth. Love is considered to be the answer for practically everything that plagues mankind.

There seem to be many kinds of love. Best known is romantic love, but then there is mother's love, father's love, God's love, brotherly love, and quite a list of others including love for mankind. Most experts on love insist that love is not an emotion like hate, and anger, and joy. So I was trying to figure out what love is exactly.

I was told that, because I wanted to do the right thing by the people in Africa, I loved them. So could we say that love is the desire to do right? But a desire is an emotion. So you can see, we can go on and on about what love is. So I prefer to separate romantic love from the others and say that romantic love is romantic love and the other loves are just love. Let's keep it simple.

Love has been around ever since people have existed on Earth. So if love is the answer to all that plagues mankind and the way to achieve peace on Earth, why do we not have peace by now? If love is the solution, why has it not solved all our problems? Perhaps love is not exactly what we have always been led to believe it is. Now is the time to keep an open mind, since the fate of the human race is at stake as you read these lines.

The fact is, the entire human race and all of the religions, philosophies, and psychiatrists have the functions of love exactly backwards.

- It isn't that if we love, we will stop the killing and torture. It's the other way: if we stop the killing and torture, we will then be able to love.

Confront the logic of it. People who are being tortured and people who are torturing cannot love. Only those who are not involved in such things can love. Thus, love will not stop torture. People who love, of course, will not be doing those terrible things.

- Don't expect those who are killing and torturing to begin to love. They won't.

If the husband stops beating his wife, the couple might get to the point where they will love one another. But you won't stop the beating by having the husband love his wife. It doesn't work that way. It was said of the worst torturers of the Inquisition that they must have loved those they tortured because they thought that torture would ensure that their victims went to heaven.

Mankind has been taught love for thousands of years, and it has never resulted in peace. The teachings of the Bible resulted in the Crusades, among many other wars. After several hundred years of missionaries in Africa, all Africans have heard of Christ and the message of love. There are more Christians in Africa than in the USA. The leader of the rebels in Uganda wants to start a country that is based on Christianity.

- He was raised as a Christian and now he kills daily. He often goes into the villages and forces sons to rape their mothers or sisters, or even to kill them. (source: I learned this information while I was there with the people).

All the peoples of Africa have heard the Christian story. Most of those in Africa who are killing one another are either Christians or Muslims, and both religions teach love.

Generally speaking, I would say that love is an invention of nature to ensure the continuation of the species. It is triggered by natural occurrences, the first of which is sex. Very few people consider themselves “in love” until after they have had sex one or more times with the opposite person, and if they don’t have sex, it is the prospect of having sex that triggers the love. Mother’s love and father’s love are also inventions of nature. This love guarantees the survival of the species. It is simply a mechanism of nature to ensure our survival. Except in extremely rare incidents, love of any kind seldom lasts more than a few years. It is fleeting. It lasts long enough to see children grow to where they can fend for themselves. The idea that people who love do not kill has never proven itself out in life.

Love seldom lasts long enough to bring about a happy life for any one individual, yet it is always touted as the road to happiness. The major religions, including Christianity, were all started by men who preached love as the most important aspect of the religion. When this particular man passed on, those religions continued to teach love among many other things, but they have brought humanity only suffering and death. While their followers have done what they could to practice the various religions to the best of their knowledge, the result has been war, suffering, death, bigotry, and all the other evil things that have continued to hurt us through the centuries.

Sorry, but treating people well, helping them, being nice, furnishing the suffering people with medicine, helping people find new lives and making children safe **should not be done out of love.**

- **These things should be done because one knows it is the right thing to do.**

They should be done because one knows that they support the survival of our species. They should be done because of one’s integrity and compassion and one’s understanding that our species needs to survive. There are plenty of people who want

to call that love, but wanting to do what is right because of integrity is simply that. Love is love. Don't mix them up.

For thousands of years, religious leaders have made people feel guilty for not loving, for not solving the problems of mankind by loving everyone. So let me make a few logical points:

- You don't owe your love to anyone.
- If someone wants your love, he or she should earn it.
- If you want someone else's love, do you think that person owes it to you? If you are any kind of a person at all, you don't believe that people owe you their love, so why would you think that you owe your love to others? You don't.

What you owe is your integrity to yourself. You know it is part of your job to see that humanity survives, because if it doesn't, neither will you. The better humanity survives, the better you will survive. That's simple logic. What you owe is to yourself. Your love is your own, and it is up to you to give it where it is deserved. When you give it where it is not deserved, your integrity slips and you are encouraging the other party to get something for nothing. Remember, integrity means everything, the whole of it. Doing the right thing comes from your integrity and personal power.

We don't know how long your love will last in any one area, but the one constant is your knowledge of right and wrong. In the long run, the only thing you can depend on is yourself. It's not your love, not your faith or your belief. The only person you can depend on for sure is yourself and what you **know**, not what you **believe**. You are the only one that can be certain that you will always do what is right and that you will always have the necessary determination to treat people correctly. Religious people have always been taught to rely on love to keep them doing the right thing and treating people right. But what happens when you find that you are human and your emotion of love has been replaced with some lesser emotion, such as

anger? What has happened through the centuries is death and destruction, and love didn't stop them. When the death and destruction finally got stopped in any area, it was because

- **The people there finally did what was right, not because they loved.**

Your love may be long gone, but you will still know right from wrong. It is then up to you to know that you will continue doing what is right. Thousands of people have found themselves in the position where a loved one has become a spy or an enemy or a killer or a thief. Sometimes, because of love, they continue to allow that loved one to do wrong things. But acting out of love is not appropriate. When love leaves, most past lovers begin to act as criminals towards one another. Because they were acting out of love, they no longer know how to treat one another when love leaves.

- **Look at the fighting among people who are getting divorced.**

We must always act upon what we know is right, not what love or any other emotion tells us to do. All emotions are useful at certain times and love is no less useful than any of the other emotions. However, never allow yourself to be ruled by your emotions; always look at exactly what is right and wrong. No emotion will give you that answer. You, and only you, know that answer. When you depend on any emotion to give such an answer you will eventually lose, and you will know and assume the guilt of your wrong choice. This is especially true of the emotion of love.

You are God playing out your particular viewpoint. You will always know what is right and what is wrong. You will never need an emotion to drive you, or tell you how to treat other people. You will always be able to control your destiny along these lines. Do not allow yourself to be driven by anger, or hate or envy, or any other emotion including love. Do not feel guilty because you do not love someone or some group or even some race. Realize that you will always treat them right

regardless of how you feel, because you will always know right from wrong.

Normally, love is not totally under our command. We may try to love everyone the same, but we will seldom achieve it. We even love our children differently than other people and each child differently from the others. Let's be practical about this: you may find that one group trying to help you is a very nice group, and another group trying to attack you is not very nice. Do you suppose you would have the same undying love for both groups?

If you do, I suppose that is great, but you might find logical thinking easier to come by if you do not love the bad group to death. You may find it easier to protect yourself than to force yourself to love indiscriminately. As long as you are you, you can determine the right action without loving the bad guys. You don't have to feel bad because you don't love the bad guys. It's not necessary in order to do the right thing.

To insist on loving the bad guys against all logic is a belief or goal of various religions and paths to enlightenment. Such practices are mostly to impress on one's fellows as to how wonderful one is. The good that comes from such practices is seldom of any value and has gotten thousands murdered.

For example, look at the millions who were killed in Tibet by the Chinese back in 1959. That was when the Dali Lama fled Tibet. The Tibetans loved the Chinese and the Chinese killed them. This one incident, that resulted in the death of millions of good people, should be a good enough lesson for anyone. The Tibetans loved everybody and it worked OK for a hundred years, and then along came the Chinese and it didn't work anymore. The fact is, you have the ability to do what is right without misplacing your love.

I include the subject of love in this book mainly because a discussion of spirituality and God almost always includes it. Jesus taught love, but the ensuing 2000 years have been a disaster. Since Jesus died, there has never been a 20-year period when his believers were not out killing *en masse*. It's still

happening. As I write these pages, Christians are killing Muslims and other Christians in several African countries and other places in the world. At least 25 other world-class leaders taught love and belief in God and that God had a plan for humanity. From what we can find in the writings of history, none of them were any more successful than Christianity or Islam.

Now don't get me wrong; I am not trying to encourage you to not believe in God. However, things may not be as we have always been taught here on Earth. Also, keep in mind that the main places on Earth where religious people are not out killing others are those places where religion has been taken out of government—mostly the industrial nations.

Jesus taught love. Thousands of spiritual leaders have taught love and are even now teaching love. We've all been told that Biblical love, the love that Jesus taught, is different from romantic love. There are a few who insist that the two loves are the same, but most people separate them. Some spiritual leaders really get into love. They write whole books explaining the complexities of love. They talk about how "God is Love" and that if we just love people, the problems of the world will be solved.

The assumption is that you will do good by those you love and not harm them. From the language or the explanations, one is led to believe that love is necessary for us to understand how to treat people and to help them. But all you need do is remember to "always do what is right"—one of the Genesis 2 Church's precepts.



## 16. Enlightenment and the Beginning of the Universe

Many people who seek enlightenment would like to believe that, as we learn more and more about life or about the meaning of life, and as we meditate and study and maybe deprive ourselves of worldly goods, we then approach spiritual perfection. Then we eventually graduate to upper levels of enlightenment where we finally walk into total enlightenment in a higher plane of existence, far above everyone else—or something along those lines. Some even talk of it as though enlightenment is walking into the peaceful light at the end of the tunnel of death, after living an extremely moral life, or something like that. Then there are those who worship a God whom they believe will save mankind someday.

Many people have traveled to India and sought enlightenment by visiting holy men, yogis, or other sages – and many have been impressed by these people.



But those who really understand notice that the holy men are making a good living while thousands around them die in poverty. I would be more inspired by someone helping to improve their neighbors' living conditions and to alleviate their suffering than someone studying for a lifetime in some ashram or convent.

For a moment, let's look at facts as opposed to truth. What is truth? Once a great man said truth is "That which is." We might like to believe that definition, but unfortunately that is not what mankind has adopted as truth. What mankind has adopted as truth is "That which he believes." I wish it was better than that, but it isn't.

Every religion, every philosophy, every political party, every branch of science, every neighborhood gang "knows" that the

truth is what they believe. Not one individual out of a million realizes that what he believes might not be actual facts. To any individual, the truth is what he happens to believe. So then, like it or not, in the courts and especially in the government, the truth is what people there want it to be, because people believe what they want to believe.

The **facts**, however, are quite different. The facts are really “what is.” In theory, the facts are what we try to get to in the law courts, and sometimes that happens. Forget about the truth; it is not going to answer very many questions. Let us, instead, look at facts.

So with that in mind, let’s look at the question, “What do we know about life, God, and all of those other questions that people have repeatedly asked?” We have a great deal of truth, but very few facts. There is no real evidence

- that God exists;
- that there is any life after death; or
- that man has a soul.

Sorry, but these are all truths (people’s beliefs). No facts exist to prove any of these, one way or the other.

I would like to show you a Practical Enlightenment plane of existence right here in our own reality. There are a few people living among us who have almost reached this plane and even fewer who have actually reached it. Once you realize what this plane is, your existence here completely changes and you will never be the same. When you understand this practical plane of existence, you will also understand why it is the ultimate plane of enlightenment in this sector of the universe. You will then know

- what you should do;
- what your place is in this universe;
- what this universe is all about; and
- the answers to most the questions that have perplexed mankind for thousands of years.

Now that this plane, this Practical Plane of Enlightenment has finally opened up as it was meant to at the beginning of the third millennium, it is available to all who would seek it. You can obtain this knowledge without years of study. Simply by reading and understanding, your life and your attitude toward life will change.

You have probably heard many times that the third millennium will be a new age. It indeed will be a new age—the beginning of an age of peace, not only for Earth, but for the Galaxy as well. Among many other things, it will be an age of Practical Enlightenment. Such enlightenment will be simple, easy-to-understand enlightenment that can be attained by anyone who seeks it. There is a great saying, “Seek and ye shall find.” Only a few will seek and fewer still will really find, but the knowledge does exist.

The third millennium will be an age of peace—providing that we make it that way. Yes, we will have to do it ourselves. No God or enlightened being is going to come and help us. We will have to do it without help from elsewhere.

Practical Enlightenment is an understanding of the universe and God for practical purposes, to help you run your life with more fun. It differs greatly from the old enlightenment where one had to spend years loving one’s fellow men and following the teachings of old masters, all of whom camouflaged their failure with wonderful words of wisdom.

I searched for this knowledge for 50 lifetimes and for 50 years in this lifetime before I realized that it was not written in books or contained in religions or philosophies on Earth. I don’t say this lightly, as I have a partial memory of most of those lifetimes and a full memory of many of them. Those who have arrived at this same point mostly do not have the advantage of past-life memory. So they have arrived and understand their position, but often do not know why and, for the most part, do not care. They just know their spiritual position is true without a great deal of fanfare. Simple logic verifies to them that they are correct. When I finally discovered this knowledge, it came to me

in the same way it came to the few others, by logic, and also from searching for so many years in the past.

However, I have an advantage that most others do not have. My memory covers many of my past lifetimes. I remember hundreds of thousands of years and many lifetimes of searching for enlightenment and that is why I have tried to write this book. I have also written a book on the story of Earth which extends over the last billion years, and tells of a plan that will eventually change this planet, but the book is not yet published.

I had to take responsibility for this knowledge before I could use it. I had to decide with certainty that the knowledge is mine and I can use it. You will have to do the same. And if this enlightenment comes to you, even if it comes because of things I say, you must verify it with your own logic or memory. Nine out of 10 people who read these words won't get it. However, those who get it will know. There will be no doubt. Their logic will tell them it is truth.

There are those in religion and those who study philosophy who say that logic can't be used with spiritual things. But that is only because they insist on believing things that aren't logical. They insist on not accepting responsibility for things they should be responsible for, and, if they can explain things without logic, they can escape guilt and responsibility.

There are those who are ready to accept Practical Enlightenment, and those who need years of study and self-understanding and loving everybody and everything. At this point you are ready or you are not. You will soon know if I am right or not. There is much information about spiritual things in books and in religions and philosophies. Much of the data is true, but one will never become practically enlightened from books or religions. If you read every spiritual book on Earth including this one, you would not become logically enlightened. No book, no spiritual teacher, and no religion can make you reach the Practical Plane of Enlightenment.

The single thing that will finally bring about your Practical Enlightenment will be your own logic. Of course, you must be ready to use your own logic. You will take the things I say, or

the things some other teacher says, or the teaching of some religion, and using your own logic, you will either reason it out until you are practically enlightened or you will not. The correct logic will get you there, and incorrect logic will not, mainly because you will have decided against using logic.

Religious and spiritual people won't use logic, and they dislike it because it does not prove their beliefs. However,

- this is a logical universe. Scientists have been proving that for hundreds of years.

Real spiritual enlightenment is logical. On the other hand, there are thousands of books, tapes, and seminars on standard enlightenment that preach love and all kinds of wonderful spiritual messages that don't in any way approach logic. They can only make it reasonable if one just has faith, or one believes with one's heart, or some such thing.

Many of the New Age philosophies based on love are very complex. None observe that all those teachers who have appeared over the centuries, who have preached love and associated philosophies, have wreaked tremendous havoc on Earth. Jesus taught love and the Ten Commandments and millions have died.

- They were burned at the stake, hung, tortured to death, killed in holy wars, and killed in dozens of other barbaric ways.

It doesn't matter how many different excuses you give for all this killing, such as, "It isn't what the teachers taught." It's the results of the teaching that matter. You can teach love or forgiveness or any number of other wonderful things, but it's what happens as a result that is important. Logic tells you that if millions are dying, it is not just happening in a vacuum—something is causing it. Two thousand years of killing by those who believe in a particular book and no one has been able to stop it or slow it down. You can say, "Well, no one is really understanding the book, or really applying its principles." That is not an excuse.

Each new generation is totally sure that it will do things right and that its elders have not followed the message correctly. Then another generation of war and murder ensues. There has got to be something more logical than that. Love feels so great and so wonderful that people want to make it more than it is.

Again, this is not to downgrade love. Yes, it is nice and we hope it lasts for a long time. But God, as nature, created love to ensure the survival of the species—to ensure that people will make love and have children and then love and care for their children. That's it. When people try to make love do more than that, it winds up a disaster. Be honest with yourself and be able to confront the truth. The more people who confront the truth, the more likely we are to survive as a species.

Love isn't going to make people be good, nor is it going to bring peace to Earth. That is something that people will have to do. People will do that because they are God and inherently know what is good and bad. They must listen to themselves, and not to how love makes them feel. Read a little bit of history. Just randomly pick any year out of the last 2000. The story of the Christian religion is the story of torture and death throughout that time. All you hear as an answer to that is, "People do not do what the Bible tells them to do." So what! Of course they don't. Each generation for the last 2000 years has said that. Each new generation is totally convinced that they are finally going to do it, but it never happens.

Christians are killing right now and have never stopped. Muslims teach the same thing, and they are killing also. It takes a great deal more responsibility than creating total and undying love. Love actually keeps one from using logic and being fair about things.

Go to almost any school and you will find parents ensuring that their children are getting a good education, good treatment, good lunches, and no harassment from other kids, but seldom do you see parents seeking these things for all the kids in the school. When something goes wrong on the school grounds, a fight or other problem, parents typically rush in to protect their own children, but seldom try to protect other children. They love

their children. Or when a fight breaks out, the parent rushes in for his child, but seldom tries to protect the other child in the fight.

But both children need protecting. All the children need protecting. When I have noticed parents rushing to protect all children on the school grounds, or working to obtain good clothes for all the children, I have questioned some of them carefully. I learned that they did it because they knew what was right, not because they felt undying love for everyone.

So you think things are getting better? Consider the Christian who runs a drug company—how many deaths is he responsible for each year? How many people suffer and die so that he can make money? It's a known fact that 900,000 people die each year from drug side effects and that is only the tip of the iceberg. This is not a great big secret. You can find it on the internet. Just search "medical drug deaths." At least several million die each year worldwide so that drug companies can make money. You might say, "They are trying to help!" Well, all the US drug companies have been offered cancer cures, heart attack cures, and cures for most incurable diseases—many times. They have always refused to test them. There are incidents too numerous to mention where they refused.

- While in a city in South America, I was dispensing a cure for malaria. Two drug companies in the US forced the government there to chase me into the jungle in order to stop me.

Through pharmaceutical drugs, we now torture and kill more people than ever before. Sorry, but the Bible has had 2000 years to have some effect, but things only get worse.

Many people throughout the ages have reached a level that they considered enlightenment. They were often quite unusual people, and people came from distant lands to meet and talk with them. After years of study and meditation, they developed amazing attitudes and mental abilities, and some developed parlor tricks that were often very interesting and even exciting. They were often held in extremely high regard.

But people often starved in the area in which these highly regarded people lived. They never improved their country, just their methods of worship or meditation.

- They reached a level of what appeared to be high spiritual development, but it never resulted in a better world or fewer wars.

They, and everyone, thought it was great that their spiritual development was so high, but the fact is that it was fantasy. What good does it do to have wonderful spiritual development if things on Earth do not become better? What good does it do if people continue to starve, kill one another, and die of diseases?

### **About Logic**

There is an evil force that does not want the human race to reach higher levels of genuine enlightenment. There is much misinformation set up to prevent people from reaching the higher levels. An example of such misinformation is the concept that logic is no good.

- The idea that we cannot trust logic has been sown by those who seek to keep mankind in the dirt.

This is only one lie, but it is very important because logic is absolutely necessary to reach the true upper levels. If a person will not trust true logic, he will not reach these upper levels, but will tend to travel to false upper levels.

Chapter 18, on *Who or What is Evolving?*, talks about the false upper levels and the frauds there. Logic has been so thoroughly destroyed in people's minds that to even say that it is useful in spiritual things or religion sounds like sacrilege. The word *practical* gives us a name for this top plane of enlightenment. This is the Practical Plane of Enlightenment or just Practical Enlightenment.

Being able to use spiritual logic is the essence of this plane but it is the knowledge you obtain from this logic that brings enlightenment. Logic is the tool you use to get the Practical Enlightenment. Being able to use logic in general does not get

you there—you must actually use the logic. This plane has nothing to do with faith or hope. It has everything to do with knowing that your logic is correct. Here are some rules of logic, not necessarily in any particular order except for the first rule below. It should always be the first rule.

### **Logic Rule #1**

- **Believing something does not necessarily make it true.**

Logic must be based on truth. It can seldom be based on beliefs and never on faith. If I must use beliefs or assumptions in my logic, I must know that they are beliefs or assumptions and must keep that in mind.

Again, and I am talking strictly from a practical viewpoint. However, there are assumptions that must sometimes be made to bridge the gap between actual truth and the data that appear to be logical and feel right, but cannot be proven as true. These assumptions will come from your past experience and your knowledge. Practical Enlightenment is not open to the vast majority of people. I wish I was wrong about that, as we could then change Earth so much more quickly.

If humanity was able to use logic, this planet's vast problems could be prevented:

- people worldwide killing one another;
- the answer to all disease being known but not used; and
- millions of children dying each year for lack of care from anyone.

If you can use logic to obtain enlightenment, you will have to step back from your childhood teachings. Children are taught how to think and use logic by being told no truth and almost total lies until they are 10 years of age or older. We present them with Santa Claus, the Tooth Fairy, the Easter Bunny, God, hundreds of fairy tales or myths and hundreds of hero comic book or movie characters. They are never given the truth about world affairs, the death of a relative, family finances, or anything else important.

Then, in their teenage years, they are expected to suddenly be logical about everything. It seldom happens. If you can overcome the non-logic and the effect of childhood lies, you will be able to use logic, but this is not something the vast majority of mankind can do. They are so accustomed to believing lies that when more lies are told to them, they go ahead and do what is expected: they believe them.

True logic rules out 95 percent of what one was taught as a child. The untrue stories were not the problem—it is the killing of logic that has damaged people, and being led to believe that lies are OK. When a child is expected to believe, he does believe, even when he knows at first that the story or explanation is a lie. In such an environment, true logic cannot exist.

- What was, and is, worse than anything else is that children are taught to believe that it is OK to believe a lie.

They are taught it is OK to believe in Santa Claus and the Easter Bunny and all those cartoons and a thousand other lies. Do you wonder that, when they reach adulthood, preachers, politicians, and hundreds of others lie to them and they cannot figure out what is truth and what is not. They have been taught for so long that it is OK to believe the lies, that their minds have no basis of logic.

## Logic Rule #2

- **All actions have consequences.**

It is impossible to create an action without bringing about some kind of consequence. Another way of putting it is that **you always get what you create**. This is probably the most important rule of all.

For example, a brother who continually torments his sister gets a fight with his sister. A homeowner who throws trash in his yard gets a dirty yard. A child who studies hard gets knowledge, and one who doesn't stays ignorant. The child who treats his bicycle roughly gets a broken bicycle. It always works this way—you get what you create.

### **Logic Rule #3**

- **All things in this universe are created by physical actions.**

Contrary to belief, nothing is created by thinking. Nothing happens until the thoughts are put into **actions**. Thinking is necessary to determine the actions, but nothing happens until one takes action. We must do something to get something done.

### **Logic Rule #4**

- **I create my life by the choices I make. These choices determine my life.**

### **Logic Rule #5**

- **What I don't know can kill me.**

We must always strive to find knowledge that is related to personal survival and well-being. For example, keep in mind that all products sold are not sold for our benefit, but for the benefit of those selling the products.

### **Logic Rule #6**

- **I keep control of my life by assigning responsibility to myself for all problems.**

Maybe you were not loved when you were a child, and maybe a drunk did run a red light and slam into your car, and maybe your fourth grade teacher was not very good at teaching you math, and maybe the bigger kids did pick on you walking home from school, but blaming other people for these situations causes you to lose control. Why not take responsibility for these situations and regain control?

It's a matter of thinking properly. If the brakes on your car fail, instead of blaming your mechanic, start figuring how you can personally check them from now on. You might sue the mechanic but you still can take responsibility for testing and checking, or paying someone to do so. If your friend steals your money, find out what you should have done to prevent it. Realize that you are in charge of your life.

## Logic Rule #7

### ➤ It is totally wrong to believe a lie.

Our survival and the survival of our species depend on our always researching and detecting any lies in our lives. This is true of all situations. There are many people who find it easier to believe a lie rather than to take the time to check it out.

- It is totally wrong to believe that it is OK to believe a lie, no matter what it is.
- We must always prove or disprove information that we suspect is wrong.
- We must never lie to a child or allow a child to believe a lie.

Thus, if you are to fight your way to enlightenment, you will have to overcome the false logic of childhood and use the logic of reality in this universe to the best of your ability. What is God? Well, if you have been reading or listening to spiritual (but not religious) books or speakers, you will have heard the concept “We are God” many times. But what does that really mean? Many of the speakers will say that we are God, but a few sentences later they will say that God has a plan for mankind or for Earth. The problem is, if we are God and God has a plan for mankind, it doesn’t make much sense or logic.

If God, almost any kind of God, even one with a tiny bit of mercy, had a plan for mankind, it would not include all the killing and suffering and by now, it would be getting somewhere. People have been taught that it is logical to believe that God would have a plan. On the contrary, it is crazy and stupid to believe such a thing.

For 10,000 years, mankind has been killing more and more of its own kind. In the twentieth century, humanity killed more people than in all the centuries before. Is that improvement? Mankind has improved its ability to kill people, but is that really an improvement? If the plan was really from God, it would surely be having some success by now.

Every day, 3000 children die of malaria, and every day an additional 3000 children die for lack of clean water to drink. That does not include the number of adults who also die of the same things, and the thousands who die of poverty and malnutrition. If that is the plan of a compassionate God, I would certainly hate to see an un-compassionate God. See how ridiculous it is to believe such a thing? Yet most people believe it. If I were God, I could certainly come up with a better plan.

Let's get back to the question, "What is God?" I think that those spiritual leaders and books that say, "We are God" are approaching the truth. However, let me point out that only a small group has reached Practical Enlightenment so far.

### **Another Look at God from the Beginning**

Hopefully, you will notice better logic this time. Let's take a look at what God may have been in the very beginning: there was no Earth or even a universe because God had not yet made them.

- There were no natural laws, as God had not made any;
- There was no light, no matter, no space, no energy. There was absolutely nothing.
- God had no language;
- He did not think, as there was nothing to think about;
- He did not feel, as there was nothing to feel;
- He did not see, as there was nothing to see.;
- There was no time, as there was nothing to create change and thus time could not happen.

Let's try to reason this out logically about God—an activity that religious philosophers and preachers seem to fear most. It has been said thousands of times that "You can't use logic when talking or thinking about God." But in fact, you can. At least you can use more logic than what is currently used. Maybe it isn't perfect, but it goes a lot further than the religious logic.

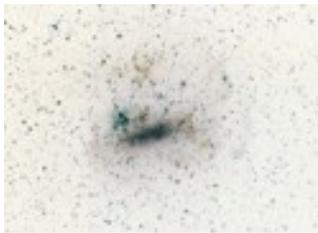
## The Beginning

Before the universe existed, there was Nothing. Modern science says that the universe is approximately 13.6 billion years old. Thus logic tells us that there was a time when the universe didn't exist. Space, Time, Energy, and Matter (STEM) and did not exist.

Somehow we now have a universe. Before time, there wasn't even empty space, as space is the distance between two points, and, if there are no points, there can be no space. "Nothing" is a hard concept to understand.

- Zero does not represent nothing, as it only tells us there is an absence of something—whatever one is discussing at the time, which was at some point present.

But real Nothing represents nothing present for eternity. We don't even have a



mathematical symbol for nothing as zero cannot represent nothing. Zero only represents the absence of something like zero dollars, or zero guns, or zero bullets.

Since the first speck of universe existed, there has never been a situation where Nothing existed. So think about it again. Since before the universe, there was Nothing, not even empty space, where did God exist? Logic tells us that God did not exist either. With nothing in existence, there is no place for God to exist either. Of course, if you want to throw away logic, you can then say, "God always existed." But as long as we are using logic, it is most logical to say that if there is Nothing (not even space) then even God cannot be.

If you missed that, let me state it again. If there is nothing, only Nothing exists, and thus even God cannot exist. The logic here

points out that before the first single point came into existence, not even God existed. Logic tells us that God had to come into existence at some point, and there was nothing in eternity before that. It is no more logical to say that God just happened than it is to say the universe just happened. However, it is much more logical to say that Nothing just happened. In fact, that is the only thing you can say about that time before time. Nothing existed.

Getting the concept of Nothing is not easy. If you had a universe of empty space, you would not have nothing. It would be empty space and empty space is a long way from being Nothing. Nothing means that the space doesn't exist either.

Looking a bit more at how God came into being, the secret probably lies in the nature of Nothing. You would think that Nothing can have no nature or qualities. But that isn't true. By logic, Nothing does have qualities. For example, when Nothing existed, it had the quality of eternity. That was an inherent quality.

- Nothing has no size.
- Nothing has infinity.
- Nothing cannot exist.

These are all qualities that are part of Nothing. We don't know what else, but it would be logical to assume that Nothing probably has other qualities that we don't know about. Wouldn't that be funny? Just the inherent qualities of Nothing (one step less than zero), turn out to be enough to be the beginning of God. We don't have proof of that yet, but pinch yourself. You really are here, and, logically, it all had to start with Nothing.

That's the way it had to be. Nothing had enough inherent qualities that somehow God came to exist out of it. Pinch yourself again. You are indeed here. The only way it could have happened, using standard logic as we know it now, is that:

- **God came to exist out of Nothing because of the inherent qualities of Nothing.**

I don't mean to say that God came into being all of a sudden. It's more logical to say that God evolved into being like his universe. Somehow something was created. Look at it one more time:

- Before something, before the universe, there was Nothing.
- That Nothing had certain inherent qualities.
- Those inherent qualities made the Nothing that was not there into something more than Nothing but not yet into space, time, energy, or matter (STEM). In terms of this universe, we have to logically say that Nothing pre-existed it.

### **A Law before This Universe**

At this point, I think we can assume a law that existed before this universe in eternity. It still exists today and exists in all universes. That law is stated as this:

➤ **In order to exist, you must create.**

It is a law that even God cannot circumvent, since Nothing existed before the first particle of the universe. God only came into existence when the first particle of the universe was created. Before the first particle, there was Nothing. After the first particle, God's evolution began. Let us guess that God's first creation was a point. There is nothing simpler than a point, as it takes up no space and has no weight. Space cannot happen until God creates a second point, because space is the distance between two things or two points. Perhaps God simply got the concept that the point existed. It would have been hard to create something with mass at that time, as even now a point does not take up space or have mass.

In fact, you can do it now: create a point without space or mass. Just get the idea that there is a point two feet out in front of you. Place the point just by postulating it is there. You just created the simplest item that can exist in this universe. It is doubtful that God actually created a particle with weight and mass and time and energy—out of thin nothingness. Most likely, he

merely got the concept that a point existed (as you just did) and eventually got the concept of a second point.

Now what am I saying? I said, “He.” I don’t believe that a “He” existed. No. I think it is most likely that just a concept existed. You have heard the theory that when several explanations exist, the simplest one is usually the best.

So one of the qualities of Nothing has got to be that it can register or somehow contain a concept. Somehow, out of eternity, a concept emerged, and that concept was simply of a point. Even though it was not STEM (space, time, energy, or matter), as these things did not exist yet, it was still something. You have heard that this universe abhors a vacuum. In fact, a perfect vacuum cannot be created. Somehow something did exist that was not STEM. But it was something. It was halfway between this universe and Nothing. It was a concept that does not require space, but it does require time, as there was “before the point” and “after the point.” Thus time came into being.

### **More Points Exist**

One could no longer say that Nothing existed. Then somehow, in this nothingness that now was one step above Nothing, there came into being another concept of another point. The two points were just concepts recorded in empty space as there was now space, in the distance between points. The concepts were not a result of thought—just a result of the qualities of Nothing. Then thought happened. One or both of the concepts of the points changed or moved.

As time passed, more concepts were created and the concept that the points were moving or vibrating in relation to one another, or spinning. Then the concept came into being of a particle which could have been made of many points. That particle didn’t exist—just the concept of it.

Concepts do not take up space, nor do they have any weight. Normally you would think that they have to exist in a mind, but who says so? We don’t know. Then, more and more concepts were created consisting of more and more points, then more concepts and so on. It wasn’t matter and energy, just the concepts of matter and energy. And those concepts made up a

mind, a very basic mind. And that mind was able to think. Because at that time, thinking consisted (and still consists) of moving, changing, and comparing concepts.

Somehow, Nothing was able to create a concept. Nothing existed then, and Nothing exists now, but concepts now also exist, and as well, time exists because the concepts change. Change creates time. The mind then made up more concepts. It decided that the points would interact in a certain way. The electron and the laws for the electron were merely decisions that points would interact in certain ways, but they were only concepts in God's mind.

So God's mind was created as the universe was created. It was made of concepts. Time also started because there was "before the electron" and "after the electron" as well as before and after all the other things that were created. Remember that the creation consisted of God creating concepts and finally making one series of concepts into what we call an "electron." He then visualized a second electron existing, and, for that, he had to assume that there was distance between the two.

God at that time was totally simple. His entire mind was made of a few concepts and nothing more. But as he created more concepts and changed them around, his thinking became more and more complex. That is basically what thinking is today also: changing concepts around in the mind.

If you watch the movie *The Matrix*, you will get the idea. The universe is the matrix in God's mind. What we are saying here is that God created these things by simply saying, or postulating, that they were created. The only thing that exists is the concept that things exist. Particles and energy and matter are only concepts in God's mind.

- God evolved himself as he evolved his universe.

Once God had created the first point, he himself existed. He wasn't a huge complex being. At that time, he was a simple being, one who had just created the simplest thing possible, but that was the entire universe at that time and he was God. Once he had created two things and determined that they moved in

relation to one another, or that they were changing, he had then created time. From that point, he went on to create all the other particles and laws and the laws that would create a universe of such particles. But again, the particles were only concepts.

Nothing existed before something existed, so, logically, God could not have existed until he had developed his first concept. God was as simple as the electron he created at that time. Eventually, after billions of years, he had a complete universe in operation.

- In fact, this universe we live in is probably a virtual universe in God's mind.

It exists simply because he says it exists. It operates according to the rules he has postulated. This would have been an almost impossible concept to understand before computers were available, but now people have made virtual worlds in computers.

That's almost the same way that God has created the universe. Some of us believe this. It seems logical. How else could matter and energy exist in space? They really can't, as there is no such thing as space, only the concept of space. There are no such things as matter and energy, only their concepts. God could no doubt see his universe, or maybe it is more logical to say that God could perceive his universe, but to have a greater awareness of it, he needed self-awareness.

He started developing viewpoints in his universe. He created an instinct in his universe to develop things that changed more rapidly than planetary movement. You could call this instinct "evolution." As his universe became more complex, he became more complex with it.

Even more amazing is this: God created himself from Nothing, and he is still Nothing. That may throw you for a minute. But let me add this: in terms of this universe, he is Nothing. God created the virtual



space, time, energy, and matter (STEM) of this universe, but he is not made of these things.

God is not made of anything in this universe. He made this universe and he is not these things. So when speaking of this universe, we can only say that God is Nothing. That's why nothing in this universe will ever be able to touch God. And guess what? That's you. You are God. In terms of this universe, you are Nothing. You, as God, have no weight or energy—you create energy but you are not made of energy. You have a viewpoint, that at this time you consider to be you, that is located in this universe only to the point that you consider it to be located here. And you are located in time in the same way—only to the extent that you consider yourself to be in present time, are you here. It is entirely possible for you to consider yourself to be at another point in time of this universe, and then you would be there.

Why would time travel be possible when all those considerations that were made still exist? They were made in sequence. Time travel would consist of merely perceiving the earlier sequence instead of the current sequence.

So from a present-time point of view, you as a spiritual being have no weight, no energy, and no location (because Nothing cannot have a location). You are not located in time, because Nothing cannot be located in time. You only have these things to the extent that you regard yourself as having them.

Thus you cannot be hurt or affected in any way by anything of this universe. The only way you can be “hurt” is if something makes you think you are supposed to be hurt. And that is how we play the game. If, according to the game, you are supposed to be hurt, then you can agree that you are hurt. To not agree that you are hurt when you should be, would be to break the rules of the game, and that would be regarded as a miracle.

That's the reason why there are miracles happening about twice a month among each 100,000 persons. I estimate that about 8000 miracles happen each year in the US. It happens very seldom, and if it did happen all the time, we would not have a game, and there would be no point to the universe.

## **We Are All God**

Each person is the same one and only God, but looking out of a different pair of eyes. Get the idea of 10 telescopes looking into the night sky at the universe. You move from telescope to telescope looking into the universe, your universe. You are looking at the universe from 10 different viewpoints. That is the way you do it as God. You look out at your universe through millions of viewpoints through the brains that are behind those eyes. It's all you. You are just looking at these pages through one of your viewpoints. You are experiencing your universe through this one viewpoint that is now reading these lines, and from this viewpoint, that's what you know. But you have millions of other viewpoints.

There are those who would disagree with the concept of a virtual universe in God's mind. My logic may not have proven it to you. But it cannot be disproved, ever. No logic, no scientist, no machine, no religion will ever disprove the concept of a virtual universe in God's mind. Do you see why not?

Well, all evidence of this universe comes to us through our senses. That's sight, hearing, taste, feeling, and smell. No data reaches us any other way. The nerves of our five senses pick up impressions that travel through the nervous system to our brain. There is no other way that one can obtain data concerning this universe. It's all nerve impulses. Telepathic communication might be another method of communication but not enough to make a difference in most of us.

The brain (mind) then interprets these nerve impulses and constructs patterns that one can see as pictures of this universe. You can prove nothing else so there is no way of proving that matter exists. The only thing we know is that we somehow receive information in the form of electronic nerve impulses that give us information. There is no way of even proving we have a body. All we know is that we somehow take the final nerve impulses created by our brain and transform them into concepts of our universe and our position in it. We would like to believe that the desk in front of us really exists, but all we know is that nerve impulses from our eyes and hands are

routed to our brain, converted to concepts, and thus we see or feel a desk.

In addition, we know one more thing: this data must travel as a series of separate impulses that represent many pictures like a movie. It cannot be otherwise.

We don't know how many pictures per second you receive, but we know it must be in pictures like a movie. We don't know the exact process yet, but your mind or your mind and brain must in some way take the data flowing into the brain and make them into separate still pictures so you can make sense of what you see. A continuous flow of motion doesn't mean anything until it is stopped for a second or a millionth of a second. If you have ever seen a series of still pictures with no separation between them, you know that one cannot make sense of the flow until it is stopped for a period of time.

The still pictures are needed for recording the pictures in memory. One needs a series of still pictures for any memory. So as we observe the universe, we are continuously observing many series of still pictures that make things appear to move. This is how virtual universes are created for computer games, and this must be the way the universe is created in God's mind as a virtual universe.

You have to be God because nothing else can be self-aware. A bunch of concepts cannot be self-aware. Eventually, God evolved life using the rules that he had already determined were in place. And eventually this life evolved to the point that not only was it aware, but it was aware that it was aware. And what was that? Well, that was God. An individual awareness unit was simply a viewpoint of God in the universe that he had created. Each viewpoint consists of God looking out at his universe. And a human being is God being aware of being aware—God looking out at his universe.

When intelligent life finally developed somewhere in this universe, and was finally aware that it was aware, it was God being aware of himself for the first time. And what was the purpose of all this? It wasn't because God wanted to teach himself lessons. God was perfect. God could not have been

less than perfect at any time because only he existed and only he exists now. That's all there is—nothing more. No other gods, no other beings, nothing to say that God is not perfect, no other thing to compare with God. So what are we in relationship to God? We **are** God.

God, looking out through the eyes of a criminal, through the brain and mind of the criminal, acts as the criminal would act except in rare exceptions. Sorry, but God cannot do otherwise. It's not because he is bad or good or anything else. He has simply constructed his universe with certain rules, and he made a decision somewhere near the beginning of time to follow all the rules he has made—or more likely, it has never occurred to him that he could change anything he has already done. It probably wasn't even a conscious decision. It was simply the way things went.

Since God is the only being that has ever existed or that ever will exist, the only reason for this universe is to have “a Disneyland” in which he can play. There is no other reason. God didn't say, “I going to build a Disneyland.” It just never occurred to God to not do it. God is not trying to evolve, but at times, he does play the game of evolving in this universe. He can create things that he considers imperfect and then have them evolve toward perfection. God often creates games in which he, acting as his viewpoints, evolves toward spiritual perfection, or some such thing.

Each of us, being God, plays his role as he sees fit. When a person breaks the rules of ethical behavior, for example, it results in a problem for that particular viewpoint. That is simply a rule of this universe that God set billions of years ago. This is an important point. You are God—not part of God, but the whole of God. God plays the games of this universe **as you**, not **through you**. You are God playing the games of this universe from the viewpoint that you are now, that you created long ago. He follows all the rules as you do, from your viewpoint, and he is you and you are him.

God plays the games of this universe through millions of viewpoints, and he **is** each one of those viewpoints. God is not

a being sitting on a throne somewhere in the sky trying unsuccessfully to get the beings he created to follow his commandments. That is just one of the games of this universe that God invented from some viewpoints that happened to evolve in that direction. That game has been particularly unsuccessful and extremely painful for God.

We could continue on in that vein until we destroy the entire planet and all God's viewpoints on it.

- God's purpose, if you want to think about it for a while (maybe a thousand years of thought would help), is evidently **joy**.

That's right, joy. Because of the rules that were set up from the beginning, it is possible for a person to create joy. It is possible for a nation to create joy. Very few have done it, but that doesn't mean it isn't possible. When people in any area begin to help one another towards making a better life in almost any way, they immediately begin to notice that they are feeling better.

Why is that? Well, anytime a person starts things in the direction of joy, he always begins to feel the beginnings of joy. Religions have noticed that and have played on it. You feel better when you help people, even including helping yourself. It really has nothing to do with religion. It has to do with moving people towards a better condition, towards joy. God does not have a plan for people and for this planet except what the people of this planet have made for themselves.

Most people would like to think that God is all-powerful and that he is in control of everything. But it doesn't quite work that way. We would like to paint God as merciful and kind, but he is you. And he is also that terrible murderer who is doing ethnic cleansing over in the Sudan as I write these pages. That murderer, in the final analysis, will never allow himself to get away with it. He will eventually punish himself completely, but meanwhile, we must find a way to change mankind and we can do that.

Do you remember making a plan for this planet? If there is a plan, it is because we made it; that is, one or a number of God's viewpoints made it. The plan is not going to be of much help unless the viewpoint or viewpoints communicate to other viewpoints (people). And then those people will have to advance enough to create a better planet where joy prevails instead of pain. Do you see? God is never going to come and rescue us and punish all the bad guys. Because we are God, it is up to us to make the world a better place. And if there is a plan, we've got to make it. If we don't do it, if we don't make the world a better place, it will never become a better place.

There is only us. No other God will ever come. The one plan of this universe is the urge to move toward joy, and it was embedded within this universe at the beginning. The game is to move God (all viewpoints) to that place. It is up to us to win that game. We created it, and we continue to create it.

Remember, there is no game if one cannot fail. So success is continued joy, and failure is continued pain. I hope that is an obvious logical deduction. Mankind has the urge toward joy, but failure at creating joy creates pain.

- Pain is the opposite of joy. Pain takes away joy and joy takes away pain.

There was evidently an earlier plan that is still in operation. That was the urge toward self-awareness. Evolution was the result of this plan and was finally achieved in this universe. Scientists believe that evolution happened on Earth but it could have happened billions of years ago on other planets. Why do we not remember creating the universe and continuing with it as it has evolved?

- **A few people do remember, but the game was to not remember.**

But evolution is not finished by any means. It has a long way to go. Somehow, some of the viewpoints, evil ones, have discovered how to thwart evolution. We have reached, in the process of evolution, a stage where we must evolve mentally towards higher and higher intelligence and understanding, but

that has not happened for many millennia. As far as intelligence and understanding are concerned, mankind has evolved downwards rather than upwards. We know the reason and we must change it.

### **Why No Evolutionary Progress?**

The reason for our lack of evolutionary progress has been mentioned in Chapter 21 on *World Peace*, but let me say it again. The human race destroys the minds of its children from birth to 10 years old and longer. So the human race cannot evolve upwards in intelligence. We must change that or the human race is damned.

We must evolve either upward or downward but nothing in this universe ever remains stagnant. At this time, the human race is evolving downward. If you doubt that, go to any clinic in your city. Stand outside and within an hour or a day anywhere from 1 to 1000 or more cancer patients will show up, many of whom have or will soon have terminal cancer.

- The statistics compiled by the US government show that **97.2 percent of all patients who accept treatment from doctors will die painful deaths in less than five years.**

Millions die in this manner throughout the world and yet there are more than 100 known successful cancer treatments available to them. It is also known that:

- **If nothing is done**, a cancer patient has a 10 percent chance or better of success, instead of 2.8 percent chance.

Throughout the world, millions die each year from medical treatments. Each of those people has a choice and the ability to research alternatives, but they refuse to do so. Do you think that shows any advancement towards intelligence? Not too long ago, the world never heard of cancer or dozens of other now-common diseases, and people were less apt to allow doctors to kill them. The human race is getting more education in terms of years, but not more intelligence. Intelligence is being blocked.

## More Proof That It's a Virtual Universe

This is a virtual universe in God's mind and all that matter out there only exists as concepts in God's mind. I'm sure you have heard about the fire walks that are put on in various places in the world. They were reported to have started in Haiti. My wife did a fire walk, walking through the fire four times. They usually have about 20 people. They build the fire very large and allow it to burn all day. Then late in the evening, when it has burned down, they rake the coals out into an area about 10 feet wide and 20 feet long. The coals are red hot and about 4 inches deep. Measured by a standard high temperature pyrometer, they measure 1600 degrees, which is four times hotter than a typical wood cook stove. Then, without a lot of ceremony, the entire group takes off their shoes and, after rolling up their pant legs, walks across the coals one at a time along the full 20 feet.

- **Like all of us, these people are God. All they have to do is not run the burn program in God's mind and agree with each other to not be burned.**

I have a friend who cures incurable diseases by merely having the patients repeat a series of numbers. If it's a virtual universe, any disease is just a program in God's mind. What is a program in any computer? It's just a series of numbers. So if my friend can find those numbers and change them a little, the changed program will no longer affect the sick person. My friend has cured thousands of people of every kind of a disease I can think of by having them repeat numbers. The patient is also God, is he not? So by repeating the disease program's numbers incorrectly, he erases the program.

The rules of the game were completed at the start of our universe and they were agreements with self. The agreement was to:

- Forget the rules, knowing that they would always be active, and agree to search for them as part of the game.

I am afraid it is rather a serious game because failure is painful. To fail even at a small game is painful, and generally, the longer the game lasts, the more painful it is to fail. Failing at a 20-year marriage is more painful than failing at a 6-month

marriage. Failing to make a business work successfully is painful, whereas making a business work is joyful. The same applies to marriage.

There is another explanation for why we do not remember the game rules. The universe was constructed in God's subconscious mind, on a subconscious level. God's conscious mind was not created until he had evolved to where he could be aware that he is aware. In other words, we were never really aware until we evolved minds capable of being aware that we are aware. Being aware of being aware only really happened when evolution (directed by God's earlier rules; remember, that's us) finally created viewpoints that were aware that they were aware.

### **Answers to Some Old Questions**

Here is an answer to questions you might have been asking for years. The questions might be:

- Who am I?
- Why am I here?
- Why don't I remember things before this life?
- What is it all about?
- Why don't I know all these answers?

The answer to these questions is: we already talked about the fact that this universe is a game created by God. We are not the first ones to decide this; many people have come to that conclusion. So, if God is going to play a game for the fun of it, **he must first not know all the answers.**

He must be able to start from scratch and develop answers from what he finds. The only way he could have any fun would be to start out not knowing all the answers. And that is what he does. He sets each viewpoint, that's us, at zero knowledge and allows us to develop our own knowledge through observation and learning. So why don't you know all those things?

- Because you decided to not know them.

This universe is a game directed toward joy, but it has many complications. *Secrets of Enlightenment* explains some of them and learning them is part of the game. There are many people playing the game of Enlightenment. They study for years in some monastery, or they take courses in a religious college, or they meditate many hours each day seeking to increase their spirituality or their Enlightenment, or seeking to get closer to God.

But remember, it's still a game. All those things are games. People play games. Even when inmates in Hitler's death camps were waiting for their turn, they still devised games to play. Sit any child in the corner of a room and soon he will have devised some sort of a game. Everything that people do is, in one sense or another, a game. Becoming enlightened is only one of the games; some people like it and some don't.

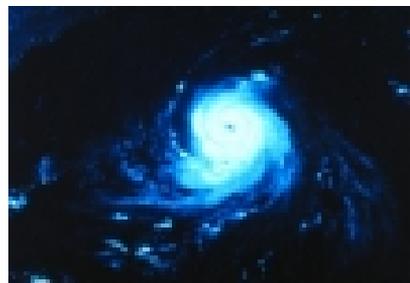
### **Why Are You in This Universe?**

You are here to play the game of this universe. You are here for the fun of it, or the joy of it. So live life and enjoy it. Do things to create joy (or fun) for yourself and for others. You need to get into spiritual things, and that's good. Just get into the game of life and enjoy it.

### **What is Your Purpose in the Scheme of Life?**

Simple. To do something to advance humanity towards joy. "Something" means something practical. Even cleaning up your yard can be something practical toward this end, but you need to keep at it. The better you do in working toward that end, the better you will feel, and the better your life will go. Do some kind of humanitarian work as time goes by. You will be amply rewarded.

Why do I say that this is the ultimate in enlightenment? Well, we have been here on Earth for at least 100,000 years and sages, yogis, and enlightened men who have written holy books have been among us all those years. The



books have done nothing but bring death and destruction to mankind. None of the holy men or what is considered ascended or almost-ascended spiritual leaders have ever brought us any salvation.

The only thing concerning religion that has accomplished any real advancement has been to take it out of government. Before religion was taken out of government, people killed each for almost anything, and every new advancement of medicine and science was fought by governments and controlled by religion. We had anesthesia a hundred years before religious teachers would allow it to be used, even on a small basis. Millions were tortured to death at the whim of religious leaders. Other advancements have come from inventions and research and other good men. But seldom throughout the ages has religion made any advancement for humanity—it has prevented thousands of advancements.

Even now, religious leaders do their best to stop embryonic stem cell research that could benefit many people, although research continues productively on adult stem cells.

The next step is to take religion out of your private life. All you have to do is stop believing that God is responsible for your life and begin realizing you are responsible for it. I believe that most people who read this book have already done that, but I mention it here for those few who might be considering it. Why not face the facts, instead of believing illogic?

Or you can take it from me. I remember the past hundreds of thousands of years pretty well. I remember being ascended into the light several times. I did it because I thought the secrets of the universe would be there in heaven. But there was no more enlightenment there than there is here. I have tried most of those spiritual paths, as have you, though you may not remember it. They always lead to imitation higher planes where pious beings exist who pretend to know all about life. You mostly learn to make highly intelligent spiritual sayings and observations, usually out of the books you have been reading. It was always a game played by serious people who did not

know it was a game and were too serious to ever find out it was a game.

But, in the final analysis, above and beyond the seven levels of heaven, the heaven of the Bible, the levels of light, and all the rest of those wonderful levels that people go to when they die, the physical universe is where it is all really at. The physical universe is the only place where the real games are being played. And when you want to become a part of it all and have joy, you will get that only here in the physical universe.

Those other planes are less solid, and emotions are very light. They can barely be felt. Joy, when it is there, is barely felt. Becoming ascended is simply another game of this universe, created by men who want to believe that something else other than self is responsible for them. You can play that game, but when you get there just remember that I told you that, here on Earth, is where the game is really being played.

You can sit around and be pious only for so long and then boredom sets in. You then leave, still without understanding what it is all about, because your beliefs are still based on illogical data. So get your head out of the clouds and come on down here where the practical games are. We are going to make this playing field a great place where people are good to one another, and we need your help.

We are going to have to do it because there is no God other than us to do the job. We simply have to take over the responsibility and do it. But we are really going to make it great. This is the basics of the game of life in this universe. If you understand this, you exist in the Practical Plane of Enlightenment. In other words, get on with playing the game. Create joy for yourself and have fun. Help with improving Earth and help with creating peace.



## 17. Practical Enlightenment

Since you have arrived this far, let me spell it out to you exactly:

- Practical Enlightenment is realizing that you are here to play the game.
- Enlightenment is realizing that it is all about integrity. It is realizing that you are God, that playing the game for the fun of it is why you are here, and that the higher your integrity goes, the more fun the game is.

That's the simplicity of it.

Realize you are in a matrix, and that programming the matrix is tricky. Many people are good at programming it for their own lives, or for particular things like certain kinds of businesses, but programming the matrix for a paradigm shift on Earth is going to be tricky. And only now, after all those millions of years, will we be able to get that job done.

The major paradigm shift I refer to is away from the brutality of man against man. Down through the ages, although many good men tried to instigate a paradigm shift away from the brutality, none were able to accomplish it. The religions have encouraged it while pretending to be engaged in changing it.

Why will we be able to change it now? Simply this:

- Only God can reprogram the matrix to any great extent, and it takes more than one of God's viewpoints to succeed. It takes many viewpoints.

Many have tried before and it never happened, so what is the difference now? The difference is that now many of us realize who we are. We know that we are God, and in knowing, our purpose becomes more pure.

### **Purity of Purpose**

In the past, missionaries, preachers and all those people attempting paradigm shifts have been trying to save men's

souls, or help God, or teach people about the Bible or teach them to worship God, or to love their neighbors. But none of those can be pure purposes. Why not? No two individuals have agreed on what God is, or what a soul is, or how or why to worship a deity that few agree on, or to create love that few agree on. Under these conditions, there cannot be subconscious agreement—on the level where all our subconscious minds mesh. There is too much difference in the understanding.

Now enter Practical Enlightened people and the others who have agreed to be here at this time, at the start of the Third Millennium. Many of them know they are God, and they are here to help humanity overcome the brutality and achieve understanding. There is no disagreement on our purpose on either the conscious or subconscious level.

- The purpose is pure: save humanity.

That includes overcoming mankind's brutality. There are plenty of us, because even those who have not achieved Practical Enlightenment subconsciously recognize a pure purpose and can be of great help. I doubt that we can fail.

Never before in the history of this world has such a group been brought together. The evil ones have been here all along, but only now do we have this great assembly of enlightened individuals along with those who are very close (close enough) to Practical Enlightenment and the millions who have come for this event alone. We will be working on changing the program of the matrix. All that is necessary is that we agree on the basic idea to overcome the brutality and basically save mankind.

Eventually, one must realize that he or she is truly God. At this time, I am sorry that I must say this absolutely and directly, as I know that the majority of mankind must still have a God to worship and look up to as the source of all things in this universe. Not many are willing to take total responsibility for themselves.

Mankind has been looking elsewhere than himself for hundreds of thousands of years, but no one has ever come to save us. It is a failed endeavor, looking and worshiping elsewhere—not just currently or over the past few hundred years, but over hundreds of thousands of years.

Although there are few of us, it is enough to get the job done, because there are millions who are with us. They may have trouble believing the whole story, but they know we must do the job ourselves. There are also many who believe that God is with us in this endeavor, and they are right—but He is us. So we have millions against a handful of evil people. We will prevail.

If you are one of us, I would appreciate it very much if you would contact us. The email address is [jhbeloved@gmail.com](mailto:jhbeloved@gmail.com). Or you can find me on the internet, in which case, please use “jhbeloved” in the subject line of any email you send. And thanks.



## 18. Who or What is Evolving?

The Player, an infinite and perfect God, can create universes, objects, identities, and other things that he considers to be imperfect. Then, for the sake of drama, he can evolve them toward perfection within the game. Remember, this universe is finite. It has a beginning and an end, a definite amount of mass, a definite number of stars, and so forth. The Player as God, however, cannot evolve because he is infinite. It would take an infinite amount of time to evolve an infinite thing, but beyond that, the Player himself as God, is perfect. One cannot evolve beyond perfection.

The game is played for the drama of it and for no other reason. As the game evolves and changes, the Player learns to play better and to create better drama, but this is not the Player evolving personally to a higher level. A chess player doesn't evolve personally to a higher level by learning to play chess better. Even a chess master's life is evolved no higher than the next man's.



A perfect God cannot evolve. The game is not for the purpose of evolving. All games are for the fun of it. The mind can evolve within the constraints of this universe, but that is part of the game and it is done for fun. What does evolve is the Player's creations. Only things of space, time, energy, and matter (STEM) can change and evolve. The mind, which is made of very thin matter, can also evolve.

The Player, being God, is not made of the things of this universe and does not change. Within the game, however, the Player's integrity can change and evolve. The Player can become convinced that he is changing, or that he is hurt or sick, or that he is a victim of some situation—but that happens when he identifies himself with his creations. He identifies himself as the body he walks around in. But when he leaves his

body and this universe, he is still himself, and unaffected by the game he played while here.

A comparison might be drawn between two people playing a game of chess. While in the game, they might have all kinds of emotions and excitement, but, when they walk away at the end, the game has not altered their lives in the slightest.

However, the Player plus his mind, which is part of this universe and a created thing, can change. The Player can change in a lifetime or not change, depending on the choices he makes. The thing that stays with him from lifetime to lifetime is his integrity.

### **What about Pieces?**

The mind is what most people regard as the soul or the spirit, and it can evolve to a certain extent. Pieces do have minds and thus can evolve like Players. If a Piece happened to be part of one of the religious sects where one evolves to higher and higher levels of heaven, the Piece could evolve in that manner and reach the highest level. But that kind of evolution is totally within this universe.

Under certain circumstances, a Piece can switch and become a Player. It's rare, but it does happen. This is not a subject of this book. If you just have to know about it, please contact the author.

Did evolution happen on Earth? Chapters 25 and 28 talk about evolution. The fact is, all things in this universe evolved. Even God evolved. (For more, please see Chapter 17.) This is a changing universe. Squirrels did not just spring into being. They evolved like all other animals including human bodies. If the entire cycle of evolution did not happen on Earth, then it certainly happened somewhere in this universe.

There may have been points where animals of certain kinds were brought to Earth in space ships of one kind or another. We may not have the full story, but evolution happened and there is no way around that fact. Evolution is part of the game. However, the scientific evolution that you hear argued about in

colleges couldn't have happened. One of the names for it is Cumulative Selection. The scientific explanation doesn't make any more sense than the religious one. (For more, please see Chapter 25.)

### **Leaving the Universe**

In the first chapter, we mentioned that all you have to do to leave this universe of drama is stop creating and you would be out. That sounds easy, but here's the rest of it. Since leaving downwards (through the lower energy levels) isn't possible, a loser can't get out of this universe. It's because he can't stop creating. Creating is automatic. In truth, any Player could quit at any time, but evidently that is not the game.

The agreement is that we will not leave this universe until we have won the game. After reading the data from people who have searched through thousands of people's minds, we have been able to find only two ways to get out of this universe:

1. You must win the game; or
2. If you do not win the game, you must stay here until the end of time, quite a few billion years from now.

It doesn't matter how many of the false games you succeed at—you must win the true game. You could quit but you made the agreement as a God, and no God would ever break his agreement. So if you want to leave before the end of time, you must win the game.

Well, what is the game? Ah, there's the rub. We don't know. That was part of the agreement, to not know. But we are free to find out, if we can, and we have learned much more about it than we knew before.

We do know a few things about the games. We know that your emotions, especially love, hold you in this universe. And we know that all the games create emotions. But the answer is not to quit playing games.

- **The answer is to become master of the games, to persist at them until you triumph over them.**

Thousands of monks and students have studied and spent 40 or 50 years and more in monasteries, trying to **not** play games. In some monasteries, they were not even allowed to talk, going for dozens of years without saying a word. But one way or another, there were always games, such as:

- learning more quickly than the other monks;
- becoming head monk (abbot);
- getting a better robe;
- earning certain privileges.

Many graduated to the next level of the game they were playing, but none that we know of ever got out of this universe. The game is to win the game, not to quit playing it. We do know that winning the game and getting out has to do with total perfection of integrity. That means personal integrity in all things. Do you really want to get out? Very few really want to get out at this time. There are those monks and other wise men who really want to, but most of them are just playing the game of trying to get out.

If you really want to leave, you must keep playing the game until you win it. Giving up indicates that you were not able to maintain integrity. Even if you don't want to leave, the thing to do would be to become so good at playing the game, with such high integrity, that, when you do want to leave, you can just step out. Getting out is evidently part of the game, and you can come back in at any time you want. It's like the mirror maze at Disneyland. You finally figure out how to get out. Then you can always go back and do it again if you want. (Well, that's my opinion, and I figure my opinion is as good as many and better than some.)

**What is the Game that We Must Win?**



To learn what it is, keep playing the game varieties better and better until you are perfect or nearly perfect. When you reach that point, you will be so good that there will be no fear and no other negative emotions bugging you. Then you will know either that you have won the game, or at least what the game is. So the point is, when you really want to get back to being a God, you must have mastered this universe.

You master this universe by doing what this universe was set up for and that is to play the game of drama. Monks seek to overcome their emotions by eliminating all games and all sex. But it never works, as that isn't part of the game. The game is just to play the game. That's the purpose of this universe. To come here and give up games is not going to make you a master of the game. The same thing applies to sex. You master it and do not give it up, since that is a game or part of a game.

Of course, that means play with integrity. According to the dictionary, integrity means wholeness and completeness. But what would that encompass? Well, just about everything. It would include:

1. Making sure that your education was complete (not necessarily including college). Taking complete care of your body would be part of your education—showering and grooming, appropriate dress, good nutrition, dental care, and exercise.

Taking care of your family, especially your children, in the best way possible—educating them fully, providing a quality home and appropriate possessions.

2. Playing a perfect game in the area of business. You would educate yourself to the fullest extent, learning all the details you must handle, treating people well, and maintaining total integrity in your work life.
3. Making sure you do your part for your country, whatever part that might be.
4. Making sure to do your part concerning humanity, whatever that part might be.

5. Maintaining your integrity in helping to improve the environment. That would include all animal life.
6. Doing your part to inform those who need to know of the proper spiritual data—maybe informing them about this book.

When you have all of these things balanced with perfect integrity, with no excuses; when you have finally got your games perfected to the point where you can create more drama by winning than by losing; and when you are confident that you haven't left someone behind and that you have maintained honesty, fairness, and goodwill throughout, then you are close to having perfect integrity.

There is more to cover about integrity, but the above is enough for now.

Although we have a game of evolving to higher levels, very few are evolving. Most people do not learn lessons from lifetime to lifetime and instead of evolving to higher levels, they evolve outward. That is, they are a Catholic in one lifetime, a Lutheran in another, and a Methodist in another. Most people do not learn lessons that carry from one lifetime to another—their lessons learned usually pertain only to that one lifetime.

What determines their status in life is their level of integrity, which is determined by their choices. In turn, their choices are influenced by their Karma and by their integrity. What you may have learned this lifetime, such as mathematics and several extra languages, and lessons about living, will not carry into your next life. If you were a mechanic, you will not remember how to fix cars. But you may retain an aptitude for numbers or languages, or fixing mechanical things.



In contrast, your integrity does accompany you from one lifetime to the next. If you can increase your integrity this lifetime, it will carry into your next lifetime and make that

lifetime better. The opposite is also true: if you decrease your integrity this lifetime, your reduced integrity will carry over into your next life.

This is a type of evolution, since you can evolve your integrity higher and higher. But that seldom happens. Normally, integrity improves for only a short while and it deteriorates for a while. It goes up and down. Humanity's inability to face the truth of its existence here prevents any consistently upward evolution of integrity. It is people's idea of the Invented God that prevents upward evolution (please see Chapter 14, *The Greatest Secret*).

As long as people will not acknowledge that they themselves are God, they can also refuse to confront the terrible conditions that exist on earth. That means they can go ahead and play golf or buy that new motor home or boat, and not worry about the thousands of children dying each day. In fact, people have their insularity so well justified that the fact that I am writing these lines makes me wrong. After all, "everyone knows" we can't do anything about widespread deaths.

So people's integrity gradually evolves downwards. Humanity killed more people in the twentieth century than in all the centuries before. Things are not getting better. Religion will slowly destroy earth. If we don't do something, mankind will eventually die. It is our job and the purpose of this book to start the evolution in the opposite direction—upwards. Of course, it's going to take a lot more than this book, but others are working on the same problem in different ways.



## 19. Acceptance and Healing

This chapter gives information on how to obtain a higher level of integrity and enjoyment of life in a few minutes of practice.

Over the past 20,000 years and more, man has developed many kinds of meditation. Most are not very beneficial. The problem is a peculiarity of the human mind—it needs to be acknowledged; needs to know when it has succeeded. That is the reason for diplomas and certificates.

At first, meditation may succeed in reducing a bit of stress or helping one realize some important thing about one's life. Then, having made the realization, the person continues to meditate. Even if they do acknowledge that they have succeeded, the fact that they continue the meditation is a subconscious indication that they did not succeed. They continue trying to succeed after having succeeded. They forget to acknowledge that they succeeded, and continue trying to succeed.

From that point onward, they continue to fail. It is a phenomenon I call “missing the point.” The point is to achieve something. No one knows exactly what he is going to achieve by meditation. But everyone hopes to achieve some improvement, and once that is done, he misses the point. The mind begins to build up a stronger and stronger charge.

- Missing the point is like graduating from high school, and, instead of saying “Great, that’s over,” continuing to study towards graduation.

When you do that, you begin to build up a charge in your mind, based on the lack of acknowledgement that you graduated. Eventually, if you never acknowledged that you finished high school, but continued working towards graduation, you could go nuts.

You might do better with meditation for a while if you recognized each small improvement when it happened and acknowledged it. But that isn't as easy as it sounds. Such

improvements can be subtle and can easily slip past your attention. Then the downward swing starts with that mental charge.

You can look for this in people who are meditating: They first seem to improve a bit, but then stop improving. If they meditate for years, they are convinced they are getting better, but if you compare them when they started with where they are now, it is seldom better, except for the education that they get from life as time goes on.

The improvement will not come from the meditation unless it is an extremely practical style. Aside from the fact that it is easy to miss the point of meditation without realizing it, most meditation styles are directed towards highly spiritual stuff. However, some are beneficial.

So here is a meditation that is practical, has a good result, and can change your life. Just don't overdo it. Do it lightly. Get the results and continue on. Once you finish all directions, you can use the acceptance meditation lightly several times a week, or more often if you like.

You can use this meditation to increase the fun in your life, or you can try it out and say, "That's dumb. It doesn't do a thing for me." And if you take that approach, it won't help. It's up to you. About 50 percent of the people who try it don't see any use in it—but they would also be indifferent to other parts of this book as well.

Use this meditation about 5 or 10 minutes several times a week, not just as a meditation but to accept all things in your life. You will reap much benefit. Give it a real try and then tell me what you think.

### **Resistance is Futile**

A number of philosophies and therapies have found that resistance is one of the major problems with any mind. You might resist evil, or the government, or going to work; or resist your mother telling you how to study; or resist being told not to

smoke; or resist the presence of smokers. The list of things we can resist is near infinite.

When we resist something, we tend to hold it in mind. For example:

- A person who resists the government will have to hold the government in mind in order to resist it.
- A person who resists evil will have to hold in his mind the particular evil that he's resisting.
- A person who resists having his wallet stolen has to hold a picture of that event in his mind.

It has long been understood by many that you often wind up with what you resist. The basic mechanism is that one continues to create that which he is resisting. The resistance holds it in the mind, and that thing which one is resisting becomes more and more real until it happens.

Not all stress in life is bad. Some is needed, like exercise. But the bad stress in life is 99 percent caused by resistance to something. If you completely eliminate your mental resistance, you'll find your stress reduced by at least 90 percent. For example, many feel stressed by driving their automobiles, but someone who drives in an alert and relaxed fashion will feel little or no stress from things like heavy traffic, delays, near-collisions or drivers with road rage. The meditation process below is designed to overcome resistance and stress in life, which, in turn, will overcome almost any mental problem that one might have created. Life will then become a great deal more manageable and fun.

### **Acceptance—The Opposite of Resistance**

Many therapies and philosophies teach the importance of acceptance, but usually don't teach how to do it. They simply state that one must accept things. How to accept things, and what things to accept or not accept is the subject of the meditation process below. How do you accept something? Sometimes a person simply cannot say, "I accept that."

Sometimes it isn't even practical, but continuing to resist something can be fatal.

On the other hand, if you understand how to go about accepting things, you can easily overcome most of the stress and a good many of the mental problems of life. It then follows that health can be positively affected. I would like to emphasize here that the rituals one follows during this procedure are as important as the procedure itself, if not more important. Over thousands of years, religions and philosophies have found that the mind has a great affinity for rituals. Rituals can set the scene for success or failure in many endeavors, especially those having to do with the mind. Do not discount the importance of rituals.



## **Meditation Rituals**

### **The Room**

The room must always be spotlessly clean and neat with everything put away and nothing out of place to annoy the mind. The condition of the room is important. The room reflects the mind. A confused room is an indication of a confused mind. It may not be, but it is an indication.

If the mind is really confused, then the room is the easiest thing to un-confuse first. It is the place to start. The greater the order of the room, the better will be your chance of success. But do not put off beginning this procedure just to improve your room. If nothing else, just put everything away and then begin improving your room as you go.

Your life will probably change as your room improves, not because of the room, but because of the acceptance procedure that you go through in the room. You will feel better about life in general as you do your acceptance procedure and the room will reflect that.

### **Candles**

Use a minimum of five candles; more is OK, but five is enough. Set two candles on each side of you and one directly in front of you not more than three feet away. It is OK to sit on the floor or in a chair at a table or desk. If you are sitting at a desk or table place all the candles on the table or desk.



For improvements, start with the candle holders. Buy some that you like.

### **Your Body**

It is not necessary to shower first, but that would be better. Change into a comfortable robe. Do not wear underclothes unless you feel uncomfortable without them. The robe should feel pleasant on your skin and it is part of the ritual. Use it to get out of any tight-fitting work or street clothes. So the three or four items to invest in at first are candles, candle holders, a nice robe, and slippers.

### **How Often to Meditate?**

You only need to do your meditation for 20 minutes three times a week, but more often is good. You should come to enjoy it.

### **The Procedure**

With the room clean and neat and the lights off, and yourself clean and neat with your robe and slippers on, if you have them, sit at your chosen table or desk and light the candles—one in front of you and two on each side but in front. Sit comfortably with your hands in your lap, but close enough to the table to read the notes given here about this acceptance procedure. In case you want to write something down, keep a notebook and pen along with this book.

While you light the candles, recite the following words:

“I know that I must accept thoughts and ideas that I might resist. I accept all mental pictures in my mind, positive or negative. Therefore, each week I continue to follow these

acceptance rituals that overcome negative thoughts, thus bringing about a more peaceful and enjoyable life.”

### **Procedural Steps**

1. Look around the room and find three things that are acceptable to you. Don't get complicated or take a lot of time. Just find three simple things that are acceptable to you.
2. Look around the room and decide to accept five more things you can see. This is a step beyond step one, as you are deciding, instead of just finding something that is acceptable. It is your decision that makes each item acceptable.
3. Accept three things that are not present. Do this quickly. For example, accept your automobile, your front lawn, or the roof on your house. Just accept three things that are not present and go on to step 4.
4. Visualize three things or more if you wish.
  - a. Create a mental picture of an airplane flying overhead. Accept the mental picture.
  - b. Create another mental picture of a train running on a railroad track. Accept that mental picture.
  - c. Create another mental picture of a large boat. Accept that mental picture.

Each time you do this, try to use pictures of different things. These steps go fast. Don't make them complicated or take a lot of time.

5. Create an idea that is not necessarily a mental picture.
  - a. For this first time, get the idea of going to Washington to talk to the President. Accept that idea.
  - b. Create the idea of going to South America for a vacation. Accept that idea.
  - c. Create the idea of digging for gold. Accept that idea.

If you get stuck for ideas, use some of the previous ones. Do not make a problem out of this. Do it quickly. Do these three ideas and go on to step #6.

6. Recall a time when you enjoyed yourself. Recall the pictures of that time and accept them. Accept the whole time of enjoyment. Now recall two more occasions of enjoyment. Accept the pictures you see, and each whole occasion.
7. Recall a bad time that you had. Accept the pictures you see and the whole incident.
  - a. Now find the negative emotion that was present – fear, or anger, or hate, or irritation, etc. Accept that emotion.
  - b. Find a second negative emotion that was present. Accept it.
  - c. See if you can find a third negative emotion. If you cannot, don't worry about it and don't spend a lot of time. Accept all the emotions.
  - d. Do the same for two more bad times and accept the emotions.

Work with this step each meditation session, only doing three bad times each session. Find more and more bad times and accept them as given here.

8. Go over your present life, accepting anything that you notice you have been resisting. Accept any upsetting or bad situations, but mainly look for the negative emotions, especially guilt, and accept them all. Do not try to force yourself to accept anything you do not wish to accept; just accept those things about it that you can accept.

For example, don't accept a murderer, but accept that murder happened. Don't accept bad driving, but accept that it happens. Anything that you want to do something about, first accept it as it is.

For example, if your neighbor beats his wife, accept that fact and then you can call the police or do something else about it. If you have not accepted it first, you will not be able to think about it clearly. You never have to accept that the bad thing is OK, just the idea that it has happened. The first step to doing anything rational or logical about something is accepting that it is, or that it has happened. Once your mind is no longer rejecting or resisting the thing, you can think more clearly about it.

9. Look into the future 10–100 years from now.
  - a. See a coffin sitting in a funeral parlor. Accept it.
  - b. Realize that it is your coffin. Accept it.
  - c. See it put into the ground. Accept it.
  - d. See it covered up. Accept it.

Continue to do this until it is easy for you.

Do not assume that you have to be in meditation to accept something. After you have used this meditation technique a few times, acceptance of things during the day will come naturally. If you think that this procedure and these rituals won't help, then accept that. If you think the ritual is crazy, accept that idea, but then do it. Accept any negative thoughts you have about anything. Stop the practice of rejecting or resisting negative thoughts. Simply accept any and all thoughts you have that bother you.



- Once you have really accepted your negative thoughts, they will go away and never bother you again.

When you have spent 20 minutes at this, it is time to stop. Do this meditation three times a week for the rest of your life.

In addition, you should take a 10-minute walk twice a week and accept everything you see on the walk. Accept the ground, the bugs, the birds, the telephone poles, the autos, the sky, etc. Most people are afraid of mental pictures and shy away from

them. They seldom realize they are doing that, but it is so and it causes problems.

### **After Several Weeks of Steps 1 through 9**

10. Create bad pictures in your mind, and then accept them.

For example:

- a. Create a picture of a Cadillac hitting a stone wall.  
Accept the picture.
- b. Create a picture of a man jumping from a building.  
Accept the picture.
- c. Create a picture of an A-bomb going off and accept that.

Create bad pictures and accept them to the point where you no longer resist bad pictures. This will free up your thinking for many things. If you have special problems in your life, spend more time in meditation accepting everything about the problem. Create imaginary problems that are similar and accept them.

There are many people who will say, "I am a very accepting person and this meditation will not help me." These people are confused about acceptance. I have never met a person who would not benefit from these meditations.

### **No More Headaches**

Here's a way to overcome headaches. Most headaches are the result of some kind of tension. So, if you will practice what I tell you here for a week or so, you will never have a headache longer than a minute for the rest of your life—except in the case of an extreme sickness, and then you could greatly reduce the headache's severity.

#### **The Headache Meditation**

When you have reached step #10 in your meditation, do the following steps:

- a. Look at the candle sitting directly in front of you. Get the idea that the candle is relaxing, that all tension is draining out of it. Create the idea that so much of tension is draining out of the candle that it is starting to sag. Absorb the idea that it has sagged so badly that it is just sitting there in a puddle.
- b. Clench your right fist as tightly as you can. Hold it clenched tightly without relaxing any muscles. Now look at your fist and pretend that all of the mental tension has drained out of your hand.

If this meditation is done correctly, your hand should immediately feel very different, even while every muscle is still clenched. If you did not notice a big change in your hand's feeling, go back to step (a) and continue to do it until you do notice a big change when doing step (b). About four out of five people can do this step the first time they try. One out of five will need to practice a little first. Many people believe that they feel this test because they think that the different feeling in the fist comes from relaxing the muscles. They fail to note that they did not relax the muscles.

- c. Repeat step (a). Look at the single candle in front of you. Focus on the idea that all the tension in that candle is draining out of it and the candle is beginning to melt down because the tension is gone. Watch the tension drain out of the candle.

### **Eliminating the Headache**

Accept the headache and then focus on the idea that all the tension is draining out of your head. Let the tension go in the same way you saw tension draining from the candle in step (c). Don't worry about going into a meditation session. Just do it whenever you have a headache. If you have practiced and do it right, the headache will vanish. The candle exercise (steps a and c) is very powerful if you can learn to use it for draining off emotions.

### **Preventing a Heart Attack**

If you notice a bad feeling in your chest which could be a heart attack coming on, do the same thing. Immediately lie down and relax and have the tension drain out of your chest. This will stop most heart attacks, but, once you are OK again, you need to find out what is causing the pain.

### **Managing Emotions**

You can handle any and all of your unwanted feelings such as the overwhelming grief of a lost loved one, or the unreasonable fear of riding in an airplane, or anger at someone in the past, or despair about some situation. You will not need to see a therapist for most of such problems. It goes like this:

- Think of the grief or anger or fear. Now, with that in mind, allow the tension and resistance to drain out of the emotion which is upsetting you. You may need to bring up a mental picture of the house or area where the emotion first happened. If so, remember that this picture is in present time, not in the past.
- Once you have the picture and feel the emotion, focus on the idea that all the tension and resistance are draining out of the picture, the emotion, and you. Hold the idea in mind for several minutes. It takes a while for the mental charge to drain out. You may have to do this three or four times over a week or two. But it should not take long. Or you can just accept it.

### **Managing Physical Pain**

If you practice the candle step on yourself—that is, practice allowing the tension and resistance to drain out of various parts of your body—it will, at some point, trigger a “healing response” in your body. You can make any pain in the body go away, because the body will heal what is causing the pain.

- You can cause small burns to heal in 10 minutes or so and larger burns to heal in one-fifth the ordinary time.

You will have about 90 percent more control of the things that go wrong with your body. Just put your mind on the area of pain and focus on the idea that all the tension and resistance are

draining out. Hold the idea for a while to allow the charge to drain off. Areas of severe pain may require medical attention, but if you use this simple process on any injury, it will heal much faster.

### **Remember to Use MMS First**

Keep in mind that any such pains should be first treated with MMS according to the protocols in the book, *The Master Mineral Solution of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Millennium*.

### **Touch Healing**

Many philosophies and religions use touching to assist healing or to aid in the healing process in some way. They have almost all missed the point. They believe the healing is coming from the person who does the touching, but this is never the case. The healing always comes from the person himself, the one receiving the healing. The touch merely aids him and his mind.

The brain controls healing in the body. The body can grow and heal automatically like a weed or tree, but when it is operating correctly, healing is controlled by a portion of the brain and it can be 10 times faster than healing from the normal flow of materials in the body.

When a healing is controlled by the brain, it is a highly complicated process. The flow of blood, with its nutrients, is controlled by the brain right down to the point where the brain gives each individual cell instructions about what to do. Such a healing is extremely rapid, sometimes almost instantaneous.

The problem is that pain often causes an overload in the nerves to and from the brain, and the mental horror of it all causes an overload in the mind, and thus the brain's control is diminished. For really fast healing, one needs complete communication between the brain and the affected area.

Pain causes the brain and the person who is hurting to withdraw control from the injured area, and the healing then happens like healing in a plant—entirely automatically, and not

brain/mind controlled. This causes a dramatic decrease in healing speed.

When the brain has withdrawn its control from the painful area and the body in general, the touch of a healer's hands returns that control. This is because the healer's touch draws the person's attention to the area being touched. The mind can then establish more communication with that area. In response to the healer saying, "Feel my hand," the patient must use existing nerves, and this helps to open up communication in the body. This procedure has worked miracles many times throughout the centuries. Reiki is a well-known touch healing system used for centuries, and there are others.

### **An Additional Step**

There is another step that drastically increases the effectiveness of touch healing. It is to further direct the individual's attention by saying, "Look under my fingers," or "With your mind, look under my fingers."

This step causes greater communication between the brain and the affected area. Remember, the brain is a close link to the mind, and as the mind gets back in control, the brain resumes command.

The following procedure will work on you or on other people. If you do it properly, it will work miracles. It has been known to cure almost every kind of disease and physical problem, but generally it works best with injuries and pain. Each person will and can take only a certain amount of responsibility in healing himself. Thus you will see fantastic results in some people, medium results in others, and negligible results in a very few. It will usually work to some degree or other, and seldom will it have no results at all. You have probably seen it done a number of different ways by priests and other healers, but here is the right way to do it.

### **Touch Healing Procedure**

Make sure the person who needs the healing is sitting or lying comfortably. He must, of course, tell you where the pain is. It

can be a wound, sore, a stomach pain, or pain anywhere. Ask the person to tell you as soon as the pain goes away.

Use four fingers of either hand.

1. Touch near the area of pain and say, "Feel my fingers."
2. Ask the person to tell you when he has done so by saying "Yes," or nodding his head.
3. Then say, "OK" or "Good." It is important to acknowledge when the person has done as you asked.
4. Move your fingers a small distance and say the same thing.
5. Continue to move your fingers around the area, saying, "Feel my fingers." Always accept his indication by saying "OK" or "Good."

Spend most of the time moving your fingers on and around the pain area, but don't totally neglect the rest of the body. When you touch other areas of the body, it helps the person get his mind back in communication with his body.

6. Touch near the area of pain and say, "With your mind, look under my fingers." Again, ask the person to tell you when he has done so.

Ask the person tell to you that he has looked under your fingers by saying "Yes" or by nodding his head. Respond by saying, "OK" or "Good," as before. It is important to acknowledge when the person has done as you requested.

Then move your fingers a small distance and say the same thing. Continue to move your fingers around the area, saying, "Look under my fingers," and continue to respond to his indication by saying "OK" or "Good."

As before, spend most of the time moving your fingers around and on the painful area, but also touch other areas, as before.

This procedure should take anywhere from fifteen minutes to an hour. Stop immediately if the person mentions that the pain is gone. You might be tempted to continue on, but don't. Always stop the minute the pain is gone. Always be sure to acknowledge each time the person does what you have asked by saying, "OK" "Good," "Thank you," or some such acknowledgment.

If the pain does not go in 10 or 15 minutes, then touch the area of pain and say, "Look at the pain." Do this 8 or 10 times, and, if the pain does not vanish, stop anyway. Wait several hours and do it again.

The statement "Look at the pain" is very powerful. It often handles the pain at the instant the person attempts to look at the pain. One cannot look at a pain and also create it at the same time.

- Never use the statement, "Feel the pain." This makes it worse.

In order to feel pain of any kind, including emotional pain, you must create it. The more you feel it, the more you create it, the worse it gets.

It is extremely important that these directions be followed exactly as I give them to you here. Do not change anything. Do everything as I have said. Many people who read poorly or attempt to improvise will simply get poor results. Do these procedures exactly as I have given them here.

Should there be a wound or sore that is not healing but has no pain, do this process until the pain comes. Then continue until it is gone. I have used all these procedures many times and they have always worked for me. Give it a try.

### **Continued Meditations**

These meditations need take only 5–10 minutes in the morning before rising from bed, or they can follow the above meditation where you accept your casket.

1. Accept and appreciate the playing field.

2. Look at how you prefer to feel. This should not take more than 10 or 15 seconds, but be sure to get a good picture of how you prefer to feel.
3. Look at what you would prefer to experience. Take only a few minutes or seconds to get this point done. You can use the same things each day if you wish but that is not necessary.
4. Mentally invite assistance from all those around you with the things you prefer to experience and with any of your future goals. This should take only a few seconds, but it is powerful when you really know you are God.
5. Decide to accept all negative thoughts that come to you. Make this decision every time you do this meditation.
6. During the day, when you have a negative thought, accept it and recall the positive thoughts that you made that morning or the last time you did the meditation.
7. Remember to be friendly and interested in people. Help someone who needs help if you can, but not if it would encourage the person to continue being a bum. Many people need a little help or lift on occasion, especially during hard times. At some time or other, someone helped you, so why not return the favor any time you can?

If you do these simple procedures, your life will become more fun. Please tell me how you did.



## 20. Free Will

The Player, God, created himself. Free will cannot exist in a God, or being, or person, who was created by someone other than himself. God cannot endow free will. If God created you, you would be exactly as he created you.

If God created someone with a blank mind and a blank soul and then gave him free will, that person would have no will to do anything since everything would be blank. If God then gave him a will to do something or want something, it would be from God, not from his own free will. The moment God gives you a desire, it is from God, not from you. I don't care how magical you want God to be, or how all-powerful or how almighty; I don't care if he created your soul. Whatever God creates is still his creation. If he made a mistake and his creation wasn't perfect, it would not be the creation's fault. It would be God's fault.

This is one of the reasons why religious people so dislike logic. The logic of it is that anything is exactly the way God makes it. If he makes you with a sexual desire then you have a sexual desire. If he then says you must resist that sexual desire and you do not resist it, it is because he didn't make you with enough strength to resist it. It's his fault, not yours. A creator cannot make his creations responsible for their imperfections.

A creator is responsible for his creations. That cannot be changed by his being almighty. It's easy to stand up and say, "God gave us all free will." But that is not logical, so one then says, "Well, you cannot use logic with God." If you say, "God made me, but he gave me free will," you are really saying, "God made me, then he let me make myself." The problem with that is that you will still make yourself the way that God gave you the ability to do it.

In order to have free will at this point, you have to create yourself, because any decision that God makes for you is not free will. If you are not God and God did indeed create you, then no matter what you have been taught, **you are as God created you**. If God created you with desires, then the desires you have are those he gave you. It isn't likely that you created your own desires, but if you did, they would be only desires that God enabled you to create.

Religious people have been making rash statements for thousands of years, expecting everybody to accept them and sometimes even enforcing them through torture or at weapon-point. Our age is pretty much the first one where they have not been unconditionally believed. "God can do anything; therefore



he can create you with free will." But any kind of logic will show you that you cannot be created with free will. The only way you will ever have free will is by creating it yourself. If one thing exists then the other exists. If you do not have free will, then you didn't create yourself. But if you do have free will, then you did indeed create yourself.

A creator is responsible for his creations if they are not perfect (as he wants them to be). If his creations are having trouble or pain, it is God's fault for not creating them with the ability to handle such situations. It is never the other way around. The creator is always responsible for his creations.

Perhaps the logic is more obvious in the case of a potter making a pot that is less than perfect. He cannot blame the pot for not being perfect. He must accept the responsibility for making the pot less than perfect. It is doubly true should the creator be making a sentient being who can experience pain. God or no God, there is always accountability to such creations.

It's interesting that the Bible contains the analogy about the pot. It says that the pot does not ask the creator, "Why did you make me this way?" Of course, pots cannot talk, but if the pot is not perfect, it still isn't the pot's fault. It is the fault of the pot's creator. That is such an obvious piece of logic that it is strange that Christians don't notice it.

No logical, reasonable being would expect his creations to suffer because of his incomplete work. Free will proves self-creation. Each viewpoint of God has free will because God is fully each viewpoint. Should God as one viewpoint wish to leave this universe, he can. When he stops creating himself to be in this universe, he will no longer be here. You (God) can maintain a separate viewpoint as long as you wish, or you can simply allow the memories of that viewpoint to become one with the rest of your memories. But even when you leave this universe, you will still be you. You are God and God created himself. That's not complicated.

### **In Conclusion**

Do I guarantee that all this stuff I am telling you is the absolute truth? Good God, no. I'm only saying that after thinking about it for 60 years this lifetime, and remembering hundreds of lifetimes in the past of reflecting on this same question, this is my most logical look at God so far. It's my opinion. I hope you can see the logic in it. If you can't, I will not feel slighted if you go elsewhere, or if you find a cave somewhere and begin to reflect on the questions. The logic I give here is far beyond any religion on Earth. I don't feel that I have to protect this data from other people, or be worried that someone else has a better idea. I hope they do.

I do say, however, that the logic given here will serve humanity infinitely better than the religions have.



## 21. World Peace

If you have read earlier chapters, you will be familiar with the concept that the main enemy of world peace has been the conviction that beliefs are absolute truths. If you believe this in religion, it then becomes true in the greater part of your life and all your beliefs. The ideas put out by religions have been among mankind's greatest enemies, causing the widespread inability to distinguish between belief and truth.

The other main enemy has been lack of integrity. People have been willing to close their eyes to the facts in order to make money. They have been willing to sell their souls in order to believe that they are not responsible for conditions on earth. At this time, the answer to all diseases is known, but adults and children die because some men prefer to profit from traditional "cures" (symptom management) rather than let the answers be known.

Meanwhile, wars rage, children starve, and millions die of diseases. It's all a matter of lack of integrity and logic that prevents our civilization from being the greatest, not only on Earth, but probably in the galaxy as well. We will eventually go out to the stars. Will we transport our wars out there too? You've probably watched one or more episodes of *Deep Space Nine* (it has been off the air for a few years). Will the galaxy always be warring?

Maybe we can do something now. When people learn to think properly, they will not only be honest and forthright, but also they will be able to get proper solutions for mankind's problems. Don't expect the solutions to be complex spiritual ideas. They are not. The solutions to creating peace on Earth are simple practical things like teaching children how to think at an early age. Yes, teach them spiritual things, but being honest with others and themselves is important. At a young age, understanding facts about playing and living in the home is more important than believing lies about God.

However, children can understand most things of a spiritual nature. The adult Players in this civilization can often be taught the difference between belief and truth, if they don't already know it. Most of them do. But adult Pieces cannot be taught that their beliefs are not the truth. It is beyond their capabilities to understand. No amount of pressure or logic will change them. It will never happen.

Part of the game is to realize when something can't be done and then circumvent that problem. One answer, then, is to teach the children. In this day and age, children are taught nothing about logical reasoning or about life. They are never given a single moment of discipline. The fact is, children love discipline when it is administered correctly, and hate it when it is done as it is usually done in American families.

- Bad discipline goes something like this, "Billy, don't do that; Billy, don't do that; Billy, don't do that," about 10 times and then the screaming starts and the child begins to cry and goes to his room.

Everybody knows that is wrong, but few can correct it. Children need discipline; they need to be taught how to think, not how to believe myths, and they need to be taught integrity. In the world today, maybe 1 person out of 100 can give you a good definition of integrity. People know they should have integrity, and most of them would be upset and angry if their integrity is questioned in any way. That usually means they do not have much integrity.

There is a great absence of integrity throughout the world but the great thing is that children can be taught integrity. They love it. My grandson, who is nine years old, is a black belt in Eastern self-defense arts. His brother, two years younger, is almost a black belt. They are fantastic kids. Harsh discipline is not necessary—in fact, it is counter-productive.

My father taught me honesty when I was two and three years old. He explained when I was three years old that there is no Santa Claus and said he would never lie to me. When I moved to the South at 11 years old, I found that the other kids trusted

me so much that I could act as umpire while playing on either side. That included all the neighborhood games—baseball, football, cops and robbers, cowboys and Indians, sword fighting—and even the older kids accepted my word. I didn't need to use any force, just plain honesty was all I used. Our neighborhood was safe for African American kids at that time, when almost no other white neighborhood was. I insisted that no one bother the those kids, and for five years the other kids respected that. I never had to fight anyone.

### **How We Could Teach Young Children**

So how do we teach children discipline, honesty, integrity, and above all, how to think? One thought would be to put a special children's nursery in each neighborhood, but we won't call it that. We will take care of children for parents who work or who want their children to have the training and discipline that we will give. We will start children out as young as one month. We will teach Eastern style self-defense for the discipline part and then add integrity, honesty, and how to think to the curriculum.

Such a neighborhood nursery would be only a stopgap until we can teach mothers how to teach their children. We need to have the money to train mothers. Such training is simple and easy, and we need to be able to pay the mothers to stay home and educate their children. That won't be as hard as it might seem at first. The plan is already in place.

Military academies such as West Point teach honesty and integrity, and they are successful to a certain extent, but they recruit the cadet far too late in life to make much difference. Children must understand what no Christian really understands : that you are not honest and good because God commands you to be that way, but because honesty and goodness are what bring happiness to life.

Children should be taught that stealing is a bad move—not because it is against God's laws, but because it creates all sorts of problems:

- It makes you feel guilty and withhold yourself from others.
- It means you can no longer allow your life to be open to others.
- It means you have to keep secrets.
- It means you have to always be careful of what you say.
- You must always keep the picture of your stealing fresh in your memory, and this tends to cause others to steal from you.

Children can easily be taught that their own actions and thoughts tend to attract matching things back to them. It is much easier to teach children these simple principles than it is to try to get them to believe in a God that will punish them. They do come to believe in God and that sort of thing, but they like much better the logical idea of their own actions causing the punishment. Children who are disciplined with justice and love, and who are taught self-discipline, are a hundred times more proud of themselves than children who are allowed to grow up any old way at all, as they are in most modern homes.

Children who have learned a real discipline, such as self-defense, are a thousand times more proud of themselves. When the training is conducted correctly, the chance of one of these children becoming a criminal or getting into drugs is negligible to nothing. A neighborhood with just a few children trained in this way starts changing quickly. These children will be the leaders of the community and eventually of the world. People with discipline, integrity, honor, and honesty are respected wherever they go. They show it and it is evident to all.

For thousands of years, religions have been trying to frighten people into being good. Why can't we just teach the logic of being good? Scaring people with God and Hell would not seem to be any better than scaring kids with the bogey man. The answer obviously isn't religion, since humanity has continued to kill more and more people over the last 2000 years. Those

who believed in divine prophets did much of the killing. Our last big wars killed more people than all the rest and religion did not prevent it.

### **The Gentle Revolution**

The Gentle Revolution people have developed methods of educating children so that they can have a college education with six languages and mathematics by the time they are six years old. They are very loving children with good childhoods and an IQ rating of 180–220. They will change the world if taught properly using this technology.

The Gentle Revolution has been around for about 50 years and has educated 200,000 such children. Our project, however, is to spread it across the world with better training in integrity and other important points. We have not yet developed our total plans. I just wanted you to know our intentions at this point.

At [www.gentlerevolution.com](http://www.gentlerevolution.com), you can find materials and complete data for the early childhood education. We will use most of these materials when we get our project underway. It is not underway yet, but it will be sponsored by the Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing at a later date.

### **My Plan (which has been partially adopted by the Genesis 2 Church)**

#### **1) The Chemical (mineral) MMS (Master Mineral Solution)**

MMS heals more than 95 percent of all mankind's diseases. I have personally treated more than 5000 people who were all very sick. I treated 800 HIV/AIDS patients in Malawi, Africa. They were successfully treated and went back to work. I have all 800 reports. The local hospital reported them healthy, but they could not test for HIV **negative** as no such test exists.

More than 5 million people have used MMS. It is now being manufactured in the US, England, most of the countries of Europe, South Africa, Australia, New Zealand, Mexico, and

many other countries. Some countries have banned it as being dangerous; however, the ban is not legal, and MMS continues to be manufactured by private people throughout the world.

## **2) The Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing**

We have formed a Church and our MMS-trained ministers are now healing people in more than 59 countries. They use the Church's Sacraments and our Cleansing Water (MMS). Our ministers heal for free and accept donations after the person is healed. The Genesis 2 Church gives the Cleansing Water free to those who need it and does not sell it. Generally we furnish MMS to those who come to get healed and anyone needing to have the Cleansing Water in their home can ask the Church for a bottle or two at the time they are making donations to the Church. However, there are many private people around the world selling MMS and we encourage that practice whenever a seller of MMS is available.

Our church is not a religious one, but we are very spiritual. Although we have a number of agreed-upon beliefs listed in our Articles of Association, one needs to only believe in five concepts to become a member of our church:

1. Doing good deeds;
2. Healing the sick;
3. Always doing what is right;
4. Enlightening those who sleep; and
5. Working for the freedom of mankind.

Our church is formed to be a service to humanity. Those who wish to go further in their spiritual beliefs are free to join any other church of their choice and still belong to our Church as well.

We heal people for free, not because we love them, but because we believe in doing what is right.

Since we are not a religious movement but only a movement to serve mankind, we expect to have a very large church healing people of all sicknesses and creating a world without disease. As of October 2, 2011, we have 260 ministers in 59 different countries, with churches either formed or in the process of forming. All are involved in treating diseases for the people of their countries. It will be a slow process but we expect to serve mankind for most health problems as fewer people need to go to medical doctors and hospitals. We realize that there will always be some need for medical facilities.

### **3) Evolution, the Next Step for Humanity**

I am proposing a completely new plan for world peace. It isn't based on the idea that someone will come and save us. I know it is a very unpopular concept, but this proposal is based on the concept that

- We can and must save ourselves.

We can create peace ourselves without help from elsewhere. Man can and must make the next step in evolution, so we will have the intelligence to create world peace.

### **The Importance of Early Education**

Have you ever bought a new computer or laptop? By this time, a big majority of people have bought new computers, and you have probably bought at least one. So hopefully, most people will understand this:

If you did buy a new computer, would you begin by loading it with inaccurate data? Would you install a lot of fairy tales and a bunch of programs that would generate no useful information? Instead of putting in your accounting program, would you install a five-year-old computer game? Instead of your engineering design programs, would you install a six-year-old cartoon drawing program?

Well, that's been happening to our children for the last 100,000 years on Earth.

A child's brain has a developmental time after which it closes down. That time is approximately six years for most children. During the first six years of a child's life, the child believes everything it is told. After that, the child begins to evaluate new information using the data from its first six years. Ask any doctor. The brain changes and finishes developing at approximately six years of age. This is fully evident in many studies. Data is at [www.gentlerevolution.com](http://www.gentlerevolution.com)

Look anywhere on Earth and you will see that civilization is a result of what children learn during their first six years. Of course, they continue to learn until they are 10, 12, or 15, and all the rest of their life, but the information that they will never question is what they were taught during the first six years.

Typically, the data they continue to receive through the ages of 10 and 15 merely enforces the six-year data. Nobody stops lying to a child because he reaches the age of 6, or even 10, or 15.

- You give birth to a child, lie to him about every aspect of life until he is 10 years old or more, and then you wonder why he behaves irresponsibly during his teen years?

Nobody questions this. Once, when I questioned a parent group about why they didn't teach their children some truth, they were appalled at the idea that children not learn about leprechauns and goblins and Santa Claus and the Easter Bunny and tooth fairies. They didn't want me to participate in the group. However, I was encouraged because two of the parents said, "My God, yes. What have we been doing?" They left the group when I did.

Lying to children has been done for so many thousands of years that no-one can see the damage it does. But something must be responsible for the prevalence of greed and death on this planet. It didn't just happen as an accident. There is always a cause for any condition that exists.

- The more important reason why people cannot recognize this terrible situation is that our young have never been taught to reason with logic.

In fact, it is something that cannot be taught after about age seven. A mind that has been filled with fairy tales, Santa Claus, and Easter Bunnies does not grasp logic. If such minds could be taught logic, then the Christians would not have been out killing and murdering for the past 2000 years because that never was logical. The present logic, used by all of our leaders and military men, I call, "Santa Claus logic." It was taught to them all during their Santa Claus years.

What is the most damaging thing that has ever happened to this civilization?

- Our children are taught that it is OK to believe lies.

Small children believe lies because their parents want them to, and that makes it easier for the children to go ahead and believe the lies. When they grow up, they continue to believe lies because it still seems that doing so will make life easier. Somewhere in their minds, they are convinced it is OK to believe lies, because for their first 10 years, they were expected to do so.

That's why you can get a president elected who is the worst case. That's why people will almost always elect someone who will destroy them. Deep in their minds, people have learned that it is OK to believe lies. You always have that choice. You can believe the lie, or you can take some time to prove it out. Few people want to take the time, so they just believe the lie because they believe that is OK.

- That's why people allow their children to be vaccinated, or take a dozen different drugs for ADD, and why people allow themselves to be radiated for cancer.

It's OK to believe the lie, so why check it out? That is why 970,000 people die from medical drugs each year. And that's why we have 50 armed conflicts right now as I write these lines.

Do you begin to see why Earth is so filled with greed and death? There are almost no people on Earth at this time who can think with facts. Everyone here believes lies and insists on using them as part of their reasoning. That's what causes some people to take fantastic advantage of others and destroy their way of living merely to get more money. Or to put children into a cancer hospital and radiate and torture them to death when the torture is less than 3 percent effective. The children would have been less tortured and have lived a longer life had they just stayed at home.

But then, if people could think, the child would have been cured in the first place. People can't think. This entire world is a product of people who think it is OK to believe lies, and who are willing to use lies as part of their thinking to evaluate their actions. Another example is that people use a dozen lies in allowing their children to be vaccinated—yet vaccines are poisonous substances that will give the children problems for the rest of their lives. There are no clinical trials where those vaccinated proved to live longer, or proved to have less diseases than those of a control group who were not vaccinated.

People believe that the way of life they learned at three years of age is the only way. They might allow themselves to be dissuaded from that exact way of life, but somewhere down deep, they still believe that the three-year data are true. When those data were being loaded in, they were absolute truth as far as the children were concerned, and that will never leave them, even if they later learn that they must act otherwise.

Did you know that all children have IQs between 180 and 220 from birth to the age of six? In case you don't know it, those figures, 180–220, are way higher than mere genius. Ask any mother and she will tell you her child is extremely smart. The mother can see it when most people can't. But the children lose their smarts over a period of six years depending on their upbringing.

### **An Example of a Well-Educated Child**

I knew a man who was aware of this information and decided to use it with his son. He used special procedures in bringing up his son, and the boy wound up with an IQ of 180. In addition, he taught his son integrity at age two and three and the older years as well. The young man went to work for a US government department that was extremely corrupt. After working for several years to straighten it out, he became a whistleblower and testified in Congress. That totally changed a corrupt US government department and got all the top managers fired.

The US government hates whistleblowers and therefore they tried for the next 18 years to destroy the young man's job and his record, but he was always one or two steps ahead of them. They brought the full power of the US government legal system against him, up to the lawyers of the Vice President of the United States, but they failed every time. That's what just a little intelligence will do along with the ability to not believe lies. The world needs people like that.

## **Evolution**

All children can be educated to have an IQ in excess of 180 by the time they are six years old. It's been done for over 200,000 children. It's not theoretical—it is a proven fact. I'm going to tell you how this has been done and where those children were educated, but hold with me for a little while; I want to cover a little more information. Let's talk about evolution. There are those who believe in it and those who don't.

- They call intelligent design the Bible way and evolution the godless way. They have missed intelligent evolution.

Why wouldn't evolution be controlled by some sort of intelligence? It seems to me that evolution as the result of intelligence is the only way it could have happened.

What is evolution? It is basically living organisms changing slowly to be more able to survive and possibly even enjoy surviving. Keeping that definition in mind, I suggest that we

(humanity) now take an intelligent evolutionary step forward. We are intelligent, so why can't we do this intelligent step forward? In fact, we can.

- The step is to begin educating our children so that they wind up with an IQ of 180–220.

The average IQ is now only 100. We need a world in which everybody has an IQ above 180 or maybe even above 200. When this happens, our low-average children will be 200—that's 100 points of intelligence above our current average. It's even 60 points of IQ above genius.

With children who can think, who have IQs of 180–200, who have never had to believe a lie, and who know it is wrong to believe a lie, there will be no war and people will not be trying to kill each other. They will have the smarts to fix the environment and do all the other things necessary for survival of the human race. I hope you will understand that I am not bragging when I say that, at this time, there is no other plan I know about that will save the human race. Look around you—at this time, millions of people are sick and dying. Dozens of diseases can be traced back to government laboratories. It's not easy to kill a whole species of people, but some are trying.

Religions have claimed that they have a plan to save humanity, but that plan turns out to be merely waiting for the return of some God. That isn't a plan. It's suicide. It's been 2000 years since the Christians came on line and in that time, there has never been a 20-year period when they were not out killing people in massive numbers. It's still happening in Africa and elsewhere. The industrial nations have stopped war-like killing, preferring to do it with drugs and other refinements.

You might be wanting to believe the lie that we are all perfectly safe and there is no problem. You can probably believe that the rest of your life and it will keep you happy until you die happy. But that lie will not help humanity survive the slaughter planned. And the chances are extremely high that you will get caught in one of the slaughters. We need your help, and if you don't see the facts, you are not likely to help.

The extinction probably would not happen in your lifetime, nor in your children's lifetimes, totally, but it is continuing every day that goes by right now and will be total if we do not do something about it. At this time, humanity does not have the intelligence needed to survive as a species. Without the intelligent evolutionary step of educating our children in truth, humanity will not survive. We kill, murder, torture, and refuse to help one another too much to survive as a species.

People have actually had the required intelligence for longer that we know, but for evil reasons there are those who have chosen to lie and use deception and invalidation to destroy at least half of the intelligence of children before they reach an age of even beginning to share responsibility.

### **Dumbing Down by Implication**

Believing all those lies is only one part of a child's loss of intelligence. The other part is done by implication. For example, when you say to a child, "You are too young to understand this," or "You are too young to learn how to put your clothes on," or when you allow a child to get away with doing anything that later, as an adult, he shouldn't do, you are implying that he is not smart enough to understand.

As you allow a child to remain irresponsible, you are teaching him that he is not capable of being responsible. And when the child starts believing that, he begins to operate at that reduced intelligence level.

If our enemies were to give up and stop trying to kill us, which isn't likely to happen, we still won't survive. Mankind killed more people in the twentieth century than in all previous centuries, and we have already started in the twenty-first century. With the limited intelligence we have now and the inability to think and the willingness to believe lies, we simply won't make it. We could only hope that, with our present intelligence we would still leave a few people living to start all over again, but sooner or later that natural disaster that is already due will kill the entire

human race if we are not ready for it. If we don't make that evolutionary jump that I suggest, the human race may exist another 500 years or 1000 years, but it might not exist even 200 years. We don't know.

So even if none of these terrible things existed that I have mentioned, it is still important that humanity take this next intelligent evolutionary step to a higher level of intelligence. We have already proven that we can barely exist at the present low level of intelligence. We have survived so far by mere luck.

The following story illustrates what I mean by mere luck.

For many years, Earth stood on the brink of destruction. My partner and good friend flew the East coast of the US down past Cuba for three years. He and the pilot of that plane had complete authority to press two buttons simultaneously that would have launched every missile on the East coast of the US towards Russian countries. The survival of the world depended upon my friend and a very few other men who were at the "button" during those years.

- You might ask, "But didn't the President have to OK that?" The answer is NO.

It was thought that from the time when a Russian sub began to launch missiles, there would not be time to get permission from the President. If we waited for that, we would have already lost the war. It was simply luck that none of those pairs of men ever pushed the buttons.

### **Glenn Doman's Work with Brain Damage**

More than 60 years ago, a man by the name of Glenn Doman and his wife decided to do some research into ways of overcoming brain damage in children. They started out in the same way that most doctors treat brain damage today. Typically, brain-damaged children are disabled in some way. The method of treating them is to exercise the arm or leg that doesn't work, trying to get the child to take over the exercise. It's not very effective. To make a long research story short, Glenn and his wife discovered that:

- Working with the disabled limb wasn't the answer.  
Working with the brain was the answer.

The children they were helping began to overcome their brain damage. Glenn and his wife became very effective and found that they could help most brain-damaged children and many brain-damaged adults as well.

Can you believe that, although their techniques are used in over 30 countries, the US has never adopted them? There were too many doctors who would not let go of their own precious theories. While thousands of brain-damaged children in the US had little or no improvement, Glenn cured thousands of such children and also thousands of adults who had suffered brain damage from stroke or accidents.

This is another example of that fact that just because you have something that works, you can't assume that people will give up the lies they believe. In child psychiatry circles here in the US, I personally found almost total resistance to Glenn Doman's theories.

### **From Remediation to Education**

In the process of curing thousands of children of brain damage Glenn discovered new ways of teaching children such that their education could progress hundreds of times faster than normal. There are thousands of children who have learned to speak six languages by the age of three. That's not all; they also learned geography and mathematics before they could even control their fingers well enough to sign their name.

### **Materials for the Gentle Revolution**

At [www.gentlerevolution.com](http://www.gentlerevolution.com), they supply the materials necessary to teach your baby to speak six languages, know some mathematics, and understand geography by the time children are three years old. So you see, it can be done by any parent who wants to do it.

With this new education, you can give your children a much more rewarding life. The children I am talking about have the equivalent of college degrees by the time they are six years old.

Their character is much different but better. They get along with other children playing as normal. They love their parents better than most and continue to get along even into their teen years. They do not become delinquent; they are too smart for that.

So this is how the human race could make the next jump in evolution. It's intelligent evolution.

However, in my opinion, it takes more than just the information given at [www.gentlerevolution.com](http://www.gentlerevolution.com). They have the technology but they have missed a few points, so let me suggest some further ideas.

### **A mental program for promoting logical thought**

In my opinion, such a program should be taught in all schools and most adults could also benefit from it. I include it here rewritten so that you can see the potential benefit of using this program in human affairs and with children.

#### **Instructions for Use**

Anybody can think. Hopefully that is almost a true statement, but just because you can think, does that mean you can solve any problem? How to think correctly and the tools to think with are the subject of this program. The actual thinking program is described below, but you must know how to use it. Information that any person should use, including children, becomes usable when it's familiar. The more you repeat and consider new information, the more able you are to use it. Familiarity is what brings about understanding and use.

**Datum 1:** We know that beliefs are not necessarily the truth and that what one believes and what is the truth are not always the same. We must always act in full knowledge that logic must be based on truth, that just believing something does not make it true, and when we make assumptions, we must realize that they are assumptions and not necessarily true.

Generally speaking, people do not know the difference between beliefs and truth. Of course I have made this point earlier, but it also fits here and I wanted to make the point fresh.

At this writing, there are some 50 wars going on somewhere on Earth. They are all the result of people fighting for what they believe is the truth. If they used Datum 1, the wars would be reduced to one or two, maybe three, or perhaps zero.

Sorry, but I have not been able to find anybody who does not have beliefs that he thinks are the truth, and upon which he acts. I don't know of anybody whose life would not be improved by simply following Datum 1. Most arguments between husbands and wives could be handled by Datum 1. Almost no one would go to court.

### **What is truth?**

For all practical purposes, and for day-to-day living, the truth is what can be proven, practically. Proof in a court of law is good enough. It is really rather simple. If it's the truth, either:

You have evidence, logic, signed papers, witnesses, your own eyes, and the like; or

You do it and it works.

Use and read Datum 1 continuously until it is completely natural to you. If you are religious, keep in mind that what you believe may or may not be the truth. As long as you realize this, you will never force your beliefs on others, nor will you be willing to kill to prove them, as many religions are doing now.

**Datum 2.** All of our actions have consequences. This is probably the most important of all the rules. It is impossible for us to create an action without bringing about some kind of consequence. Putting it another way: You always get what you create.

At first, Datum 2 sounds like a belief, but it is the result of infallible logic. For example:

- If I don't clean my back yard I wind up with a dirty back yard.
- If I clean my living room I will have a clean living room.

- If I continue to overeat, I will become fat.
- If I act like an ass and treat my sister badly, eventually it will result in a bad situation for me.
- If I steal a bicycle, I will create a situation which is upsetting to me and stressful, and which will sabotage me for years, even if I am not caught.

Datum 2 is an observation by hundreds of people over hundreds of years. The proof has been in the doing and it has been observed to happen by so many people that one can assume, for practical day-to-day living, that it is the truth.

### **More Examples**

My son learned this lesson when he was four years old. My wife noticed that a quarter was missing from her dresser top. She asked me to find out if one of the kids took it. When I asked my son, he shook his head No, he had not taken the quarter. I asked him again and he was most emphatic about it. No! But I saw something in his eyes. I said, "You have been feeling guilty about this all day haven't you?" He immediately broke down and began crying. "Yes," he nodded his head up and down.

The guilt was the immediate reaction, but there would be more. He was lucky to have been caught. It was only a quarter. Not much. Nevertheless, to him it was a big thing and could have lasted for months.

"A person who robs a bank might get away with it if he is smart."

That's a crazy, untrue statement. The minute he leaves the bank, all people are set against him. One reaction is that people will be searching for him so he must always worry about that next knock on the door. He will probably never know what happiness is in this lifetime. Every statement he makes must be considered with that act of robbery in his mind. Every time he opens his mouth he must decide whether to lie or tell the truth.

Even if he gets to keep the money he stole, his life and his thinking will be permanently affected by that robbery.

Your thinking about any potential situation should always include:

- What is the truth of this? and
- What reactions would this action create?

**Datum 3.** All creations in this universe are brought about by physical actions. Contrary to belief, nothing is created by thinking. Nothing happens until my thoughts bring about actions. Thinking is necessary to determine the actions, but nothing happens until I take action. One must do something to get something done.

### **Can We Manifest with Positive Thoughts?**

There is much talk about manifesting things; that is, making things happen by just thinking positively. There are always stories about how this happened and that happened because, "I thought positively about it." There are hundreds of books written about this, mostly since the 1960s and mostly by the flower children who didn't want to work. These books discussed manifesting things like money, a house, or an automobile, or anything you might want.

I have seen people spend a whole lifetime trying to manifest their money, or their living, or other things in life. They all failed miserably and lived poor lives. So let me explain how it really works, how positive thinking really works to create a good life for you, and, after you have read my explanation, then tell me if I am wrong.

#### **Tomorrow morning ...**

... before you get out of bed, think about the things you want to do during the day and about how you want them to come out positively. Think about how you want things to come out for the next month, how you would prefer things to happen. Think positively about how you want things to be, and how you want your body to feel.

Now that those positive things are in your mind, anytime during the day that a negative thought comes up, quickly switch to the positive creation that you made in your mind that morning. Maybe you thought about health that morning. You saw yourself feeling great and all of a sudden, you decide to drop by the health food store and buy a bottle of vitamins that you have been thinking about for the last two years.

The positive creations in your mind put you into a positive mode and made you create a positive action. Maybe in the process, there was someone in the health food store whose subconscious mind meshed with yours and as you rounded a corner you bumped into them and started a conversation. It could be that subconsciously they recognized your intentions and you recognized theirs.

Do you see? Your positive thoughts put positive pictures in your mind. The feelings and ideas resulting from the positive thoughts created positive actions. These actions, such as buying the vitamins and taking them, can result in better health and even a better life. It happened because you thought, but not until you also acted.

**Datum 4.** We create our lives through action. Our actions are a result of the choices we make. Any action that we take remains in our mind for a lifetime and longer.

What you do remains in your mind. What you think or read or talk about will fade, but your actions seldom fade unless they were inconsequential. Bad actions seldom fade. Thus you will be looking through all those bad actions at life and that will always be affecting you negatively.

The man who wrote the book *Think and Grow Rich* did something—he wrote a book. There are plenty books that tell you how to think yourself into becoming rich. It seemed to work for the author, and it is a really popular idea. How to get something for nothing is always a popular idea. But the next thousand people who read the book didn't seem to be able to

think themselves into becoming rich. The answer is always, “They didn’t really believe it.” That is how to explain away why it didn’t work for the other 99.9 percent of readers.

There are a few people who seem to be able to do parlor tricks with their minds, but beyond parlor tricks, it takes action. If believing in something strongly enough gets you to do some physical actions, then the belief might help you get something done, but there is no evidence that believing or any other kind of thinking directly causes things to happen.

I will admit that at times manifesting things does happen. You can influence people to a certain extent with your mind. And someone can even end up giving you something, but life is basically balanced exchange. When you get something, you give something for it. If you deserve something for some deed that you did or will do, that’s one thing, but when you get something for nothing, it tends to put your exchange out of balance. No one makes manifesting things work for long periods of time. The exchange gets out of balance fast. Look around. You will see that almost no one continues to manifest things over any long period of time.

Your thinking about any situation should always include:

- What is the truth of this?
- What reactions will this thing I am going to do create?
- Will this creation be positive or negative in my life? and
- Do I choose to make this action?

No matter what is done, your actions remain in your mind as part of your thinking. The more important the action, the more effect it has on your mind. That is an observable truth. You cannot escape the results of the things that you put into your mind.

If you bullied a smaller person, that action is in your mind and a part of your mind. You cannot escape it. The same condition exists with positive actions—they remain in your mind for a lifetime. They help you create positive thoughts and do positive

deeds. On the other hand, your thoughts and imagination, both good and bad, are gone in a few hours or days, or at least months. They have very little karmic effect on you.

So we must conclude that our lives are greatly affected by our actions, good or bad.

- Good actions create good reactions and negative actions create negative reactions.

It is never an equal reaction, but it is more like planting a seed that grows and produces more seeds. It isn't that God will punish you, or even that you will punish yourself—it is simply that what you do remains in your mind and your mind is what you must always work with. And those actions will influence your mind and therefore you.

**Datum 5.** What we don't know can kill us. We must always strive to find that knowledge that is related to our personal survival and well-being, and which is the most advanced in this society. We must always keep in mind that products sold are not sold for our benefit, but for the benefit of those selling them.

The fact is that cures for cancer, AIDS, and all other “incurable” diseases now exist in this society, but the majority of people who contract such diseases die because they do not take the time to learn what is available. People have been taught that it is OK to believe lies, and so they never learn the truth. The world is full of people who will kill for \$50 and it is naive to think that the drug companies would not kill for billions of dollars. They make billions from ineffective drugs and chemicals, and they refuse to acknowledge foods or natural cures for illnesses. Medical doctors prescribe drugs 95 percent of the time or more for all of their patients' problems.

Anyone who has a body should read a few books on alternative medicine or holistic medicine until he or she has a pretty good idea of what is available. Your life depends on it. It is foolish to believe medical lies because they can kill you, and they do kill more than 970,000 people using drugs every year in the US.

For further proof and actual figures read Death by Medicine article on the internet.

You may have heard that the reason pharmaceutical companies don't sell effective herbs is because they cannot get patents issued for those herbs, but that is not the true reason. They can get such patents.

- The true reason is that usually, the herbs will eventually cure the patient, but the drugs will not. Drugs keep the patient coming back hundreds of times, paying hundreds or thousands of dollars each time.

**Datum 6.** It is extremely important to realize that, in terms of living and surviving in this universe, it is wrong to believe lies. Believing lies can result in our failure or in our death.

Seven million people die of cancer in the world each and they died because as children, they found it easier to live with their parents if they believed the lies they were expected to believe. When they became adults, it was easier to believe the lies pushed by medical people than it was to research what other treatments are available.

The deaths of those people was determined in their childhood by their parents' insisting that they believe the childhood lies. My figures given here continue to change and increase, but the data is on the internet. Anyone can look it up.

**Datum 7.** We keep control of our lives by assigning responsibility to ourselves for all our problems.

### **You Are in Charge of Your Own Life**

Remember my earlier example of the breaks on your automobile failing, instead of blaming your mechanic, start figuring how you can personally check them from now on. You might sue the mechanic, but still, you can take responsibility by testing and checking, or paying someone to do so. If your friend steals your money, find out what you should have done to prevent it.

You can prevent accidents by staying alert. “That isn’t possible,” most people will say, but there are thousands of people in the US who have driven for 50 years without so much as a dented fender. Would you claim they are just lucky? Not really, they just pay better attention.

If someone runs into you, simply realize that you were not driving alertly enough. That often includes being rear-ended. If you get rear-ended, perhaps you should have been watching behind as well as in front. Accidents do sometimes occur that cannot be helped, but it is rare. If your brakes fail, and you have an accident, you shouldn’t have been driving with bad brakes.

The child who had a bad math teacher should have either gone to the library and found more books on math or requested another teacher, or got help from his parents. As long as an individual assigns the fault to someone else, he cannot fix the problem, but when he starts assigning responsibility to himself, he can fix it. If you are an unloved child, you had better learn to act and treat people so that you are loved. You cannot fix your parents, but when you assign the fault to yourself, then you can do something about it. It is simply a viewpoint of life and a way of thinking.

So you assign responsibility to yourself and then you are careful. You look at things with the idea of, “How can I be careful enough to make things go right today?” When you say, “My wife upset me this morning,” or “My boss made me mad,” or “My son made me late for work,” you are allowing others to control your destiny. Instead say, “I allowed my wife to upset me this morning,” and “I kept allowing my son to control the situation until I was late for work,” and “I allowed my boss to make me mad,” I must not allow myself to bring that about again.” As long as you take responsibility for the situation, you can do something about it, but if you assign responsibility to someone else then you can do very little, since you are not in control of the “someone else.”

## **The Human Race Needs Your Help**

If we take this step of educating our children to a higher level of intelligence with the capability of logical reasoning, we can perhaps achieve the survival of the human race. Without this step the end of the human race is just about guaranteed. You don't notice all those who have what are considered incurable diseases. They are not incurable. But a disease that will kill mankind could be created at any time.

With all the things that are being unleashed on humanity, the one thing that will absolutely kill the entire human race is the natural disaster that is now due. In the history of this planet, over 50 natural disasters have occurred that could have killed all of mankind. They all occurred before man came on the scene. However, the next natural disaster is due. For example, any large asteroid or comet could hit the Earth and destroy all life here. A large volcano erupting from the interior of the planet could also destroy life on Earth, but most likely the disaster will be something we never considered. If a natural disaster doesn't destroy the environment, then humanity will.

But even if none of these things ever happen, people need a higher intelligence simply to keep from killing each other. We need people who can think logically. We need people who know that it isn't OK to believe a lie and that it is actually very dangerous.

So I am asking you to help me help the human race to make the huge jump to the next level of evolution. This is no small thing—it will be the most important happening in human history. Why shouldn't it start at the grassroots level of you and me, instead of in some big laboratory somewhere? At this point, it seems that we are the only ones interested in humankind. The big labs all operate from greed for money and power. They are not here to benefit mankind.

### **“Beloved People”**

The step to a higher level of intelligence will not happen all at once. Only a few people will start. As more such children are educated, more will be started. Probably it will take less than 1 percent of our population to create world peace. I have thought

about a name that will not create fear and envy and distrust in people's minds. You may not like this name at first, but remember that we must keep a low profile. I am willing to hear other suggestions, if anyone has a good idea. Meanwhile, I will call the new children, even those who are in the educational steps, the "Beloved Children." And they will grow into "Beloved People."

The first few generations of these children will no doubt help a little, but let's hope that our generation will be able to hold the world together until these children come of age. We are going to have to trust the Beloved Children. They will be the first people on Earth ever educated to think logically and not believe lies. They will be far beyond our level of logic, but we will still be able to understand them, as they will present us with truth. It is our job to see that they are properly educated, because they will be humanity's future. The future of the human race will depend upon them.

I hope you will consider helping out in some way, no matter how small. To contact me, please use this email address: [jhbeloved@gmail.com](mailto:jhbeloved@gmail.com) and use "Beloved" in the subject line, as without that, it may not reach me. We don't want to make a big splash in society. We need to start out quietly, convincing parents that their children will have a better future if they are allowed to have a much higher IQ and to understand logic and truth. Giving a child a high IQ but allowing him to still believe lies is a disaster. I have known a few geniuses who still believed lies and their lives were generally a disaster. One such person allowed himself to be treated for cancer by doctors who practiced surgery on him. He was very smart, and soon knew more than the doctors about the surgery, but he still bought into the lies of modern medical science and thus died from their practice.

Whether a person becomes a genius is not the most important part of this idea. The most important part is that they are not lied to from birth to 10 years of age—that they are never lied to and that all information given to them from birth to 10 years of age is the strictest truth.

- If you want to restrict a child's intelligence, just start saying to him, "You are too young to understand that now."

That is always a lie but a child believes it, deciding it is true because you said it. Then she restricts her intelligence to match the belief—maybe just a little bit at first, but increasingly over the childhood years.

You restrict a child's intelligence by what you imply. For example, if a child is never asked to clean up his room or make his bed, he soon believes he isn't big enough or old enough to do so. That's a lie because he can be taught to do those things to whatever extent his age at the time allows. But, by never asking it of him, you imply a lie and he believes it.

As time goes by, we will need large amounts of money to persuade parents to support this kind of education and also to help them afford it. We will need money for advertising and materials. I have a method already in the works to get money. Things are moving slowly forward, but I cannot do this without your help. There are a lot of ways to spend your life and your retirement, but what could be more rewarding than helping humanity to survive? Realize that your future lives will also generally be here on Earth, so you are creating a place to which you will return. If mankind dies, there may be no place for us to return.

The Educational Data have not been totally developed yet. We still do not have Logical Rules of Compassion, of Integrity, and of Morals. We can work that out as we continue. But it must be based on the logical data of how things actually are. We don't need some book or preacher to tell us what is right and wrong. We must be able to sit down together and using Common law, determine the correctness of things. Common law is based on common sense and common decency. It is based on how things actually are, which cannot be changed by a body of men making laws. So we will have to work out how to teach our children these common rules.

**Join the People Who are Teaching with this Method**

One of the most important things would be for you to become part of the group of people who are teaching their children with this method, whose children will someday have an IQ of 200 or more. They will become part of Earth's future, children who will make a difference.

All I am doing at this time is getting a list of people who are interested in taking part in some manner. Then we will begin discussions of the project. Now is the time to become a part of humanity's future and of history as well. Please email me at [jhbeloved@gmail.com](mailto:jhbeloved@gmail.com) and use "Beloved" as the subject of the email, or it may not reach me.

### **About Money and Debt**

For more than 50 years, I have read accounts of our financial woes. The ones that I think confuse people most are those claiming that a dollar bill is just a piece of paper with no value. That confused me for years. If it has no value, how come I can spend it at the grocery store? The fact is that, as long as I can spend it, it does have value. So let me suggest that there is more than one way of creating value other than digging gold out of the ground. I see nothing wrong with using paper money to make a civilization easier to operate. The people who complain about the paper money do so as they think that by making everyone use gold or silver that will prevent the evil ones from stealing out money, but they are wrong. The evil ones will always be able to figure ways of stealing our money if we allow it. And that is our only problem, we have allowed it.

The next confusing point is made by the dozens of books talking about how we have overspent and now are in terrible debt. Well, this is a book about enlightenment, so let me enlighten at least my own readers:

- We haven't overspent. That's not where the problem lies.

If your automobile has a flat tire on the rear and you keep replacing a tire on the front, you will never get that car fixed to be drivable. That's what has been happening for the last 100 years with the Federal Reserve (Fed). We have got to stop fixing the wrong tire.

The indebtedness that all those economists keep talking about is for the most part to the Fed. For almost 100 years the Fed has been printing money on its printing presses and loaning it to us at full face value.

- Please understand that it costs the Fed a couple of cents to print a 100 dollar bill and they loan it to the US government at the full face value of 100 dollars.

Neither in fact nor in law do we owe the Fed any debt. There is no debt. That's bull. We are now supposed to owe them so much money that our gross national product isn't enough to pay the interest on that debt.

- The Fed hasn't loaned us anything of their own. They didn't have that 100 dollars. They just had a piece of paper worth two cents.

In law (and this has already been tested), if you lend a person something that isn't your own or that never existed, and if they don't pay back what was stipulated in the loan agreement, then in court you cannot prove that you have lost anything of value. The loan agreement cannot be a contract to pay back something that never existed. All money loaned to the US was and is money created by the Fed but under the authority of the US. It never was the Fed's money.

- So the US doesn't owe the Fed anything, since they never loaned the US anything that was theirs. All their loans were dollars created by them under the authority of the US. The principle then and now is that one does not have to pay back something that was never lost by the lending party.

The lending party cannot force you to give them something back because in order for you to truly owe something, they

must have a loss, a reduction in their financial value. Otherwise there is no debt. There is a certain amount of debt created by borrowing from foreign creditors through bonds and that sort of thing, but the majority of the debt is what is said we owe the Fed.

Congress cannot make it legal for the Fed to loan our government something they don't have. Or if they make it legal, that does not necessarily make it lawful. Even then, if our taxes had been used to pay the loans from the Fed, we wouldn't be in debt.

- Why do you think the US government borrows money from the Fed each year to function? It's because the taxes that come in go to the Fed and not to our government.
- And all the tax money that goes to the Fed is immediately shipped off to the IMF (International Monetary Fund).

There is no real debt, and there is no lawful reason for paying anything back. All those economists who insist on writing books about our debt are simply working with the Fed, convincing us that we must pay the Fed trillions of dollars that they created out of thin air while the government collects taxes from us at gunpoint.

There is no reason why our government should ever borrow a cent. The Constitution gives our treasury department the right to print money as needed. Why should we borrow it from the Fed or anyone else, since we can create the money ourselves as easily as the Fed does?

A citizen wrote me and said, "Well, if our congress gave the Fed the right to print the money what's wrong with that? The money is being printed as we need it." That's so crazy I can't believe that someone said it. I'll tell you what's wrong with that. The Fed loans us the money at full face value, and we must

pay it back. If our treasure printed all that same money we would not be in debt.

## **BANKS**

**The Fed is not the only one who has been stealing from us, and that is what it is, stealing.** The banks have been at it at the same time. Now this seems to be hard for most people to understand because it is so simple and evil and crazy people just can't believe it is true. You won't believe this at first until you check it out, but please do. Of all the thousands of bank loans that are done each day, throughout the US and most of the world, not one cent of it is money that the bank has. It is created right on the spot and put into the borrower's account as an electronic deposit, nothing more. The money is created on the borrower's signature.

Do you see? The signature is a promise to pay, and once the borrower who has good credit, has promised to pay then the banking laws allow the bank to create the money. But even worse than that, the bank gets to not only create the money and deposit it in the borrower's account, but also the bank gets to deposit in their own account the full amount of "promised to pay" interest money that must come back from the borrower as well.

Then when the borrower pays the money back plus his interest amount the bank is ahead that full amount. Well, it isn't quite that easy for the bank as the bank must send most of it to the Fed who, in turn, sends most of it to the IMF.

Can you face some simple facts that are so simple no one wants to face them? Our Congress should have faced it years ago when they made the laws. The vast majority of the debt in the world is nothing more than electronic entries on financial accounts and stolen from the people in the above manner. But still it is nothing but electronic entries.

**THE ENTIRE FINANCIAL PROBLEM THAT THE WORLD SEEMS TO BE IN AT THIS TIME COULD SIMPLY BE SOLVED BY JUST CANCELLING ALL ELETRONIC DEBTS**

THROUGHOUT THE WORLD. AT THAT TIME THE BANKS COULD CANCEL ALL INTEREST PAYMENTS TO BE MADE ON LOANS OUTSTANDING. BY THIS ACTION THERE WOULD BE 95 PERCENT LESS DEBT. THE WORLD'S FINANCIAL PROBLEM WOULD BE OVER.

IT IS ALL CONTROLLED BY THE IMF who has been stealing the people's money for over 100 years. In allowing this to happen, or causing it to happen, our congress and leaders have betrayed us all these years. It is our fault (meaning the people's fault) for allowing it to happen. We couldn't do otherwise as we were trained from birth that it is alright to believe lies. And so we continue to believe them, but there might be something we can do. Please continue reading.

### **CONDITIONS THAT MUST BE CHANGED**

For everything I say here, there is plenty of evidence on the internet. I don't want to go into the proof of these things because that is negative and this plan is positive. However, for those who want to prove what I will say here, the evidence is amply available.

The operation of all phases of Earth and all things that happen on Earth is based at this time solely on money. And, of course, the reason for obtaining money is for the power it brings. The effects on the lives of people involved do not seem to be considered.

- a) Drug companies develop drugs that will make people somewhat more comfortable, but will not cure them. Many of the drugs cost pennies to make and are sold for thousands of dollars. More than 970,000 deaths are caused every year in the US by drugs and none of these deaths are necessary. People in all countries must pay a high price for these drugs that is beyond their living standards. The cause of most deaths in the US today is seeing a doctor who automatically prescribes a drug.

- b) Oil companies create shortages of oil and falsely charge higher and higher prices, reducing everyone's standard of living in the countries where they are allowed to operate.
- c) It has been reported that a president of the US steals billions of dollars from banks around the world and uses the money for his own profit—maybe yes, maybe no.
- d) The environment is slowly being destroyed and the greatest contributor to that is the US which refuses to do anything significant about it. This is not to say that there is a warming of the Earth's environment. More than 17,000 scientists have signed a petition stating that no warming is happening.
  - Global warming is just another way of extracting money from the public.
- e) Governmental laboratories in many locations are working on producing new kinds of diseases. A number of the new diseases have already shown up around the world.
- f) Several large companies have created genetically altered strains of wheat and many other crops that are deficient in nutrients. The seeds produced by these crops cannot grow new crops. We (humanity) are now eating food that cannot reproduce or re-grow. Do you wonder why they are short on nutrients?
  - The farmers cannot produce a new crop from what they grow, so they must buy new seeds each year.
- g) The farmers cannot use their stored seeds because it is stipulated in their loans that they must use newly purchased seeds. They have no choice; they can use

only the genetically altered seeds. The crops often fail, enabling the large companies to foreclose on many thousands of farms. More than 30,000 farmers in India have committed suicide in despair over the genetically altered grains they have been forced to use and the subsequent failure of their crops. The American company Monsanto, which sells the altered seeds, does not admit any responsibility.

- h) Hundreds of millions of dollars show up in the coffers of companies who are helping to conduct the war in Iraq. All these millions require the signature of the President of the US.
- i) Oxygen in the air on this planet is now about 20 percent—it used to be over 30 percent. In some large cities, the oxygen level has sunk to 15 percent. If it reaches 13 percent, people begin to die.
- j) There are at this time more than 50 wars going on (now called armed conflicts). Hundreds of billions of dollars are made selling weapons for the purpose of killing people.
- k) For the past 80 years, the FDA has stopped every new method of effectively curing cancer and imprisoned or killed the people involved, and that also goes for many other diseases. This data is all available on the internet. The FDA is responsible for the death and suffering of more people than Hitler because they have caused the death of hundreds of millions whereas Hitler only caused the death of 52 million.

All the inequities are caused by people wanting to get money and power. The evil described above all stems from greed for money and power. Sorry to tell you this, but, at this time, people

cannot be changed. This condition cannot be changed. I know there are thousands of organizations trying to make changes and thousands more with theories on how it can be changed, but it cannot be changed. It will not be changed. Here and there things change, but it always reverts in several years. The more money a person has, the greedier he becomes for even more, and the same is true of companies.

So how do we bring peace to Earth and not only prevent wars, but change all this to a peaceful and understanding society? To understand what must be done, let's look at what has really caused the spread of greed and death described above.

The prevalence on Earth of greed, torture, death, destruction, and war has never abated. Most of us have heard all our lives that things are getting better, that civilization is advancing, that medicine is advancing, but that isn't true. We still use the same medical technology we used 100 years ago for treating cancer. The drug companies have succeeded in preventing the cure of most diseases so that they can continue to sell drugs. But they are only a small part of the problem. So what has caused this condition of death and greed to exist throughout Earth? Well there are lots of causes, but basically it most likely can be attributed to the brutality of mankind. Our job is to change that. We are a church, why not? But not by revolution.



## 22. Why Does God Allow Suffering?

I'll ask you, the reader, that question, since you are God. Why do you allow suffering? As far as I know, the answer is that you can't stop it. All the suffering, all the deaths, all the parental loss of children simply cannot be stopped by God. God doesn't have that power. It isn't that he has a plan that requires all these deaths. It isn't that God has no compassion. He made the universe, yes. But he isn't able to just change things at will. If you think he can, then go ahead and do it—you are God.

The way God made the universe was to create the various particles and agree with himself on the laws governing them. Evidently, as he made the laws, he made the increase in number of particles automatic and according to the laws.

According to scientists who have been studying the universe, there are four basic forces that determine how our universe works. A couple of these forces are extremely powerful, reaching across billions of miles and holding stars in place. They determine the existence or non-existence of planets. This is not really a physics lesson; I just want to point out how delicate the universe is. These four forces, one of which is gravity, are very delicately balanced. If any one of them were to change a tiny bit, the entire universe would come unbalanced and the resulting occurrences would be so devastating that all life as we know it in the entire universe would be annihilated.

Remember that when God started, there were no concepts, no ideas, no matter, energy, space, or time. God could not think, because there was nothing to think about. God came into existence by making a single point and then two points and then many points. Remember that before there was anything, there was Nothing. "Nothing" can be shown to have inherent qualities, but when there was Nothing, there was nothing else until the first point was created.

God could then think about the point, but the thinking was limited. The points had not done anything yet and thus thinking was limited to only a thought or two (an observation that a point

had moved or changed). After God added more points and more things happened, more thinking could occur.

The four basic forces of the universe are only a small part of the laws and rules that God made. God couldn't make a rule in isolation. All rules had to balance with the rest. He had to determine this balance each time a new rule was made. There was a point at which the universe was somewhat completed and God decided that those rules would stay in place. To change any one of them is a complex operation that could go on for millions or billions of years.

Life evolved in this universe within the rules and laws that God set down while making the universe. It may have taken 10, or 100, or 1000 universes with thousands of different laws to finally get life to evolve. He had eternity in which to do it. But he finally did it. Life evolved on Earth or was brought to Earth from some other place. But it did evolve somewhere in this universe.

To make the universe different, God couldn't just say the word and it was done. That's a nice Bible story, that God can do such things, but it isn't that easy, even for God. He can do miracles from time to time through one of his viewpoints (that is, one person) – in fact, miracles happen all the time. But to completely eliminate suffering from this planet, God would have to change many laws and rules, because things have been happening according to the laws he already set. He couldn't just say, "All suffering will now stop." It doesn't work that way. That would mean that suddenly:

- plenty of food would show up;
- all diseases would vanish;
- all bad water would disappear; and
- people would stop hating others.



No doubt, thousands of other things would also happen. The game of this universe would stop and some other game would start, but that is not what God can do.



Do you see what would happen? Many laws of the universe would change or cease to exist. The balance of the universe would shift. If it didn't kill all life, God would certainly have to work at restoring the balance. It might take thousands or millions of years. We have been taught that God is so powerful that he can do anything by just decreeing it. But for the most part, he would have to work with the natural laws in the area. For example, to stop a storm, he could change the amount of energy coming from the sun, or create a cold front by draining energy out of an area.

The idea that God could just decide that things would be a certain way, and "Pow!" things are that way, sounds great, and we all would like to believe that God can do that. God could have created a tremendous computer-like mechanism that automatically creates things the way he decides, but to implement God's decisions, that mechanism would have to manipulate the elements and laws.

Again, it wouldn't just happen. Is it starting to make sense why God cannot change things to keep his creations from suffering? He didn't make a universe such that when a game didn't go perfectly, he could simply change it. That creates a "no-games condition." It would eliminate all the fun in any universe if you always won. A game includes the possibility of losing as well as winning. If God could just change things any time he wanted, he would have a no-games condition. It would be a boredom so intense he would have to build a universe where he could lose—which is what he has now.

God does not have the power to change things like that. So you see, stopping the suffering on Earth, keeping the thousands of children from dying, or keeping people from growing old is not an option for God. It is beyond his ability. If he could do it, no doubt he would. I ask you, since you are God, wouldn't you

stop the suffering if you could? If you wouldn't, I would if I could, and I'm God, too.

We must stop all that suffering and bring peace to Earth, but we have no choice but to work within the laws and rules of the universe. It must be done that way because there is no other choice, even for God. It's a tremendous problem, because there is much evil to overcome. The only plan for mankind is the plan that people make. All of us people are God, each of us one of his viewpoints. We must make a plan and then act on it. Please read my book, *The Story of Earth*, when it is released in 2012.

Well, we did make a plan and a few of us are acting on it, and there will be many more soon. It is not a plan from some higher authority or greater group of spiritual beings or from God. It is a plan created by people. In other words, the plan was created by God while being people, because we are all God's viewpoints. The third millennium starts the plan in full swing. The true starting date is 2017. Please see the plan for world peace given in Chapter 21.



## 23. Evil

It seems that most people want to believe in evil. Many believe in the devil, one form of evil. There are those who make a game of it and worship the devil.

That's all it was, a game to oppose God, but only the "God" of various religions—not people, the real God. There are no evil people (God's viewpoints). God created the universe and through his viewpoints, created everything in the universe. We have no evidence that he created a supernatural evil being to fight against him. However, some mighty evil people have been created—by the natural rule of "you get what you create." These evil people created themselves as evil by seeking to avoid responsibility for the game, for mistakes, for greed, and for creating the universe, and mainly, of course, for their own evil.

There may be no supernatural devil, but there are plenty of people who have become hateful, vengeful, and condemning, as a result of fear, guilt, shame, anger, greed, and other emotions. These negative emotions were arrived at by mistake or out of ignorance, and so evil exists to the deepest degradation possible.

To fight evil directly is a mistake. Instead, promote good things, such as honesty, integrity, help, love, understanding, business, houses, playgrounds, etc. It would also be a mistake to not confront evil when necessary.



You can do as some spiritual leaders suggest: kill evil when warranted. But do that only when there is no other option, when the evildoers are preventing you from promoting good things. A great deal of evil vanishes when good things are being implemented. For example, seldom has there been a war when there was money to be made by other means.

Many people would like to believe that God created a devil, but the highest being in this universe is man. Even the Bible said that. There are heavens that have enlightened spirits, but they are just people when they come back to Earth. To fight evil directly is to lend power to it. Evil should be treated as a flea. Destroy it when necessary, but put as much of your power towards good things as possible.

As we create more and more good people and good things, evil will fade. The less attention you pay to evil the better, but if you need to kill it, hit it as hard as you can. Once you are sure, don't be stupid and give it a chance to revive. Kill it. Use as big a stick as you can get and hit it hard.



## 24. The Final Secret

I've already mentioned the final secret or what I call Practical Enlightenment. It isn't much of a secret in this book, but it is secret to mankind:

- You must know that you are here in this universe playing games and that you are God.

That is the final secret, Practical Enlightenment.

But there is one other final secret that you may have missed as you have read this book.

- You may still wonder why you don't know all the answers since God is all-knowing, and God is us. So this may be the most important secret.

That knowledge can change your life but will not give you a secret way to get rich. But then, hopefully, you may be richer than most when you finish reading this book.

What I am talking about is the final answer to:

➤ **Why don't we know where we came from?**

We don't remember past lives and don't know why we are here. If we are playing a game, why don't we remember being God and know all the things we have wondered about?

It all has to do with playing the game of this universe. If we are God, then we would know all the answers. We could do anything and thus win any game, but then it wouldn't be a game, would it? And that's the answer. If we are God and we know everything, we cannot play a game.

➤ **So the answer to being God and also playing a game is to not know everything.**

This was mentioned earlier, but I wanted to give you another look at it. So consider this: You cannot even get into this universe unless you don't know or don't remember the rules

required to play the game. Those rules are the laws of physics that we must agree are in place. In order to play the game, we must have a mind that does not know all the answers to this universe. That's our agreement.

That's what makes the game of this universe work. Without the condition of "not knowing," we could not have a game. So that's what we all do and we all start out at birth equal with zero knowledge of life and Earth. If we knew all these things, there would be no game. Now that you are here under those conditions, you are free to look for and find and learn all the laws of physics and other secrets of this universe. You do that by learning and evaluating things that happen. It's part of the game to learn all the secrets.

There's an old saying that summarizes this:

- Life is a game where the most important object is to learn the rules.

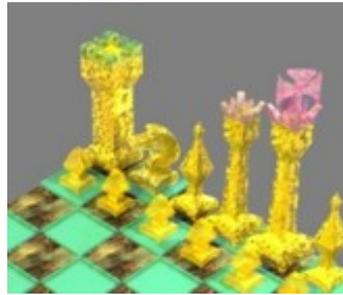
If you know the above with total confidence, you have reached a level of enlightenment that is higher than all levels of enlightenment that have come before. Only a few people finally reached the knowledge that they are actually playing games, and fewer still know that they are God. And fewer still know why we don't know it all. There are some who have reached that level. It seems to not be such a tremendous level after all, but that is only the appearance. It is the greatest level, at least to this point in time. So we play the game to the limit with enthusiasm or joy, or both.

The drama of enlightenment has been a very high drama for thousands of years and people have created all sorts of heavens and spiritual places to make the game dramatic. That game has been to rise above the rest of us and become wonderful with love. Many finally do that, becoming convinced that they are above the rest of us. In the game that they are playing, they are. But a lot of us are not playing that game, so it means nothing to us.

We play other games. I have been to some of those heavens and some of those spiritual schools, but there are no spiritual leaders who are above the rest of us with answers that we don't have. They may have some pretty good answers and they may not. They have preached love and the wonderfulness of love, but they have not gotten the job done (of saving humanity from the brutality). In fact, in spite of all those spiritual guys, it is still up to us to get that job done.

I know there are many who would like to believe that teachers are coming to teach us, that Jesus is returning to save us, or that great and wonderful spirits exist on some higher plane, but all those beliefs come from wanting to put responsibility somewhere else or wanting to be greater than other people.

The game I am talking about, that is more important than graduating to some high level of enlightenment, is called "Bringing peace to Earth and to the Galaxy." Long ago, some of us decided to do this. The Galaxy is now in the same mess that Earth is in and we are the only ones who can bring peace to both.



That's the game for some of us, and others have other games. But that is the biggest game on Earth at this time. But most other games on Earth, when played well, will also aid in our peace game. It must be done. For thousands of years, the enlightened ones, the spiritual leaders of religious movements, have tried to bring peace to Earth, but they have all failed. Being wonderful and loving hasn't been, and is not now, the answer. Now a few of us practical guys who have reached the Practical level of Enlightenment are going to have to really make the plan of peace on Earth come true. The evil ones seek to use promises of future salvation to keep us from ever taking responsibility for ourselves.

Do you see? As long as we believe that there are greater Gods than us, we remain slaves to those Gods, regardless of whether we ever see them or know them. As long as we believe in them, we cannot get past them. But we are the greatest, and the only, God in the universe. There is nothing wrong with believing in other Gods, or anything else you want to believe in, so long as you realize that we are the greatest. We must not let those other beliefs prevent us from bringing peace.

The other, lesser possibility is that if you believe there are greater Gods, greater spirits, or other dimensions with greater beings in them, then you should find the path to that enlightenment and take it, if that is the game you want to play. It will be dramatic, especially after 40 or 50 years. You will have much fun reaching that point. But work with us towards peace and consider your path to enlightenment as a second job.

Luckily, in America, we are fond of saying, "It's a free country." So one can always choose the game he wants. But let me say it here to make sure you haven't missed it:

- **All those paths to greater planes of existence, to heaven, or those other great places, are being used as a way to keep humanity in the mud, to keep us from ever reaching greatness.**

If you want to play those games, I and those like me would never consider stopping you. I've said it again and again, that the thousands of years of history on this planet have consisted of men coming to us and convincing us that their way was right. This planet has known nothing but war, suffering, and death as a result of those beliefs.

Before the twentieth century, no golden age lasted more than 20 years, and during the twentieth century, only in a few countries has it lasted more than 20 years and only after religion was taken out of government. None of the enlightened men or the religions has changed Earth and they have certainly not reduced humanity's brutality.

*(I apologize for saying this more than once and all of the other things I have repeated. I just hope to remind you so that you for sure won't miss it.)*

Let me say it one more time so that you haven't missed it:

- If you know that you are here playing games in this universe, and you know that you are God, and you know why we don't know all the answers such as why we are here, and what happens when we die, then you have reached the highest level of enlightenment ever reached on this Earth.

And that is probably true for the entire Galaxy. The knowledge of the rest of the stuff in this book and in other books helps.



## 25. Take Back Your Power

I have already made most of the following points, but there are some very important new points too, so please stick with me. If you got this far, you won't want to miss these new points.

Over the years, I have received many emails and phone calls that discussed God and what our attitude to him should be. I'd say that, without exception, regardless of the philosophy or religion involved, the opinion has always been that we should be thankful and humble towards God. So let's look at that.

In considering the philosophy of life and spiritual concerns, I belong to a sect that is smaller than the major religions, but still a very large group. This group believes that you are God, we are God, that, basically, mankind is God. There are a lot of ways to look at this concept, but most supporters of this idea seem to need it two ways: (1) that we are God; and (2) there is also a greater God we should be beholden to who created us. It isn't stated quite that way, but it underlies their writings.

On the other hand, my much smaller group believes—guess what?—that each person is God. Each person is the one and only God, and that being the case, we created ourselves. Or look at it from the opposite direction: God is each person; we are his viewpoints. Does that still seem obscure?

Look at it this way. On top of the Empire State building is an observation area where there are 15 or so high-powered binoculars. If you were to move from one to the next, observing the city below, you would be seeing the city from 15 different viewpoints, much the same as God does through people. God looks out of each person's eyes, and through the mind of that person. In order to have a game, God must observe the universe in this manner, through each person's eyes and mind, each person being a viewpoint of God, just as each pair of binoculars is a different viewpoint.

So these two questions are the same:

- Who am I? and
- What is God?

### **God is Not His Creations**

One logical point to remember here is that God cannot be made of anything that he created. Since we are sure that God created the universe, we can also be sure that God is not made of Space, Time, Energy, or Matter, since those are what the universe is made of.

I know I mentioned this before, but it can be hard to get your mind around it.

- In terms of this universe, which is comprised of everything that is, God is Nothing.

You cannot say that this is God, or that is God, because God is not made of any of these things. God has no weight, he is not made of energy, and he is not located in space or time, because these are things he created. They are not him.

Imagine that you painted a beautiful picture. You would not be the picture and the picture would not be you. It might be a portrait of you, but it would be your creation, not you. When you look at a beautiful sunset or a beautiful valley, you might like to think you are looking at God. Not so. You are looking at God's creation.

There are some who would like to think that God is made of love or that God is love. But the same thing still goes. Love is one of God's creations. God is not what he created. God is you. Love is a great thing and God has the free will to use it in any way he wishes, including granting it to mankind, but it is his creation, not what he is. You cannot say in one breath that man is body, mind, spirit, and heart, and with the next breath say that he is totally love. Love is not a thing. It's a feeling, an attitude, an idea, but not a thing. Sorry, but God is more powerful than anything he created, and he is definitely more powerful than love.

(I am so sorry about repeating important points, as my editor says that is just something one must not do in a book, but how so, if you watch TV some ideas are repeated over and over again for months. My school teacher used to say “What I tell you three times you will remember.” Well, I needed more than three times, but hopefully you get my basic ideas here. If you think it is too much, you can always complain.)

As previously stated, the simplest thing that exists is a point. Before there was anything, God had nothing to think about, nothing to compare with anything else. The first thing he could have created, before there was any space, would have been a point. A point has no space. It has no weight. It is located only to the extent that you locate it.

- Try it. Make a point right in front of you—visualize it or postulate it. A point is so simple that you can create one right now, anywhere in the room.

When God created a second point, space would have come into being, because space is the distance between two points. The idea of love would not occur to him for billions of years. Love is a complex idea. There were no people. There wasn't anyone or anything to love. If a person imagines that an entity that had never had a thought was going to suddenly create the complex concept of love, and then somehow make himself into it, I'd worry about that person's ability to be logical about anything.

Each and every person is God, looking out at this universe through his eyes and viewing it through his mind. You are God. You created yourself and that is the only reason that you now have free will. No one granted you free will, or created you with free will. You have had free will ever since you first created yourself. There is only one God, and that is the God who looks out of your eyes at the universe. It's you.

So what attitude should you take towards the game of life? Always remember that you are God. Whatever prayer you say, whatever meditation you engage in, whatever desires you create, or whatever plans you make, always remember you are

God. You are playing the game of life from the particular viewpoint that is now reading these lines. You should be able to face the facts. This is not a perfect world. It is particularly screwed up and many terrible things are wrong with it. You, as God, are responsible for the condition that this world is in. It is your job to return it to a perfect condition or near-perfect condition, at least in your area. Find and work with those who will bring about this perfection throughout earth.

So under these conditions what attitude should you have? The attitude that you develop will determine your course of action, which will, in the end, determine your success or failure, and that will contribute to the condition of Earth and of humanity in the future. Attitude is of utmost importance.

So forget the lovey-dovey, namby-pamby, do-gooder attitudes. You've been sold a bill of goods that love and gratitude will save the world. The various Bibles and books that have taught that have brought nothing but death and destruction to humanity for thousands of years. Why?

As previously stated, it's because those books have always said that you were created and someone else is responsible for the conditions of Earth other than you and that someone else was going to save humanity. Those books all teach that someone other than you is responsible. The books paint such beautiful pictures of love and someone else being responsible that you always buy it. These books were written for that purpose, to keep you (meaning humanity) continuously groveling in the dirt killing one another.

So now it's time for you to shift your attitude. Stop the namby-pamby attitude that "I am thankful for being alive," or "I'm thankful that God gave me life." You created life and the game. If you want to thank someone, thank yourself. Now decide to play the game as the God that you know you are. Realize that you (God) are responsible for conditions on Earth. Decide that you are going to change them, and that you are going to make Earth a good place to live and play. Put your shoulders back

and say, “I invented this game and now I am going to play it to the fullest.”

You can't have it both ways. People have been trying to do that for thousands of years. Either you are God and you are going to start acting like you are, and you are going to work with others to make Earth a great place, or you are going to continue praying and begging God to come and save you. The praying and begging part has been going on for millennia and it hasn't worked. As mentioned previously, have you noticed that:

- 50 wars (now called armed conflicts) are going on;
- six thousand children are dying each day from starvation and disease;
- major groups are trying to kill off most of mankind;
- more people were killed in the twentieth century than in all the centuries before; and
- millions are dying from diseases?

Who do you think is doing the killing right at this moment in the Congo? I've been there. It's the Christians. They read the Bible in the morning and kill in the afternoon. God hasn't come to save you because he can't, unless he wants to destroy the game, and maybe he can't even do that. He's you and you are already here. It's time to start saving us and stop listening to promises.

The game in this universe consists of doing, not thinking. There was once a book that explained how you can think and grow rich. Unsurprisingly, the title was *Think and Grow Rich*. The author forgot one very important point:

It doesn't matter how long you think, or how hard, **nothing happens until you do something**. The key word is **do**. This is a game of doing. Nothing happens from thinking. It takes doing. The same is true with emotions, ideas and concepts. Nothing happens with anger, hate, enthusiasm, or love. Things only happen when you take action. It's OK to love your neighbor. Nothing wrong with it, but nothing happens until you act. So you

can do to your neighbor as you would do “unto yourself,” because you know what is right. You know how to treat your neighbor. You are God.

You don’t need any emotions to direct your path. You don’t need love to tell you how you should treat your neighbor. You are love and you love things and people. Love isn’t a doingness. It is like thinking, you can love until you are blue in the face, but it has no value until you do something. You can love your neighbor until the cows come home, but until you **do** something for your neighbor love has no value. To say that you need love to do something right for your neighbor is to limit your power. It says you aren’t God.

So what attitude should you assume? Well, the best thing is to go out and stand on a very high hill, and say out loud:

“I am God and I am going to start acting like I am God playing the role I have chosen to play at this time. I am not apologizing to anyone and I am thankful only to myself for being here, alive, and playing this role.”

Don’t raise your arms to heaven. That’s too much like you are praying to someone else. Hold your arms outward, but downward, the way the God you are supposed to believe in would, if he were looking down at us.

Do you see? It’s time to stop worshiping something that has never benefited mankind. It’s time to stop asking something that doesn’t exist for permission to live. Thousands of books have been written about love. Dozens of Bibles have talked about it and all of them have been disasters. You exist and you give permission to yourself to exist. No one else gives you that permission.

You don’t have to love anybody or thank anybody or love mankind. You are God and you created right and wrong, and you know what is right and what is wrong. You don’t need love to show you what is right.

- Those people who insist that you need something other than yourself are working to reduce your power by the

only way possible in heaven and earth, and that is to make you think you don't have the power.

If they can make you believe you should grovel in front of some other God, they reduce your power by a thousand times. If they can make you think it is all much more complex than it really is, they steal your power. If they can make you think that love is what creates your power, they can then make you think you are not God, because God doesn't need anything to create his power.

The main point is this: God created it all. He made the universe and this is what it evolved to be. He could have made it any other way, but this is the way he made it. And you are him. You don't need a thing to tell you what is right and wrong. You know completely. To say that you need love to tell you how to treat people and play the game is to decrease your power by great amounts, because that then tells you that you didn't make it all and you need something from outside yourself.

- The only way anyone can make your power less is to convince you that it is less.

I think love is great, and I am not against it in any way, but all those teachers who taught love brought death and destruction to humanity. It always sounded great, but it taught that you need it and that you are not the creator.

So remember the hill. Stand on it. Put your shoulders back, hold your arms outward and downward and say:

“I'm God and I am going to start acting like I am God playing the role I have chosen to play at this time. I will take responsibility for doing my part to save mankind, because I am who I am. I am going to quit groveling and begging and thanking someone other than myself.”

So let me say it once more: either you are God or you are not. You really can't have it both ways. You can't say, “Each person is God, but he must also grovel in front of this other God that has created him.” You must see that is a lie. You must see how illogical that is. Don't allow your own power to be stolen by a lie

that people have accepted for millennia. Think about it: would the God you believe in grovel in front of another God? Why not start believing in yourself?

Many will say, “Being thankful to another power is not groveling.” Yes it is; it is lowering yourself, invalidating yourself. Don’t lie to yourself or others. Groveling is groveling. To negate your power one tiny bit multiplies a thousand times over in just a few days. Don’t do it. Start being the God you really are. Realize that some things are impossible and one impossible thing is for anyone, even the most powerful God of all, to create another being that has free will.

If you create a picture, you can never say that it is not the way you created it to be. You can lie and say it isn’t how you created it, but it will always be a lie. God can’t create you and then later claim that something you did is a sin against him, because you are the way he created you. Remember that the creator is always responsible for his creations. Not the reverse. Creations are not responsible for the way they were created – they are the way they were created and that does not constitute free will. They will always act in the way they were created to act. God can’t grant you free will, because, to do so, he will have to lie and say that you are not the way he created you. The only way you can have free will is by creating yourself, and in fact you did just that. And now you are responsible for your creation. No matter how wonderful you are or how powerful you are, you will always be responsible for your creation and that is you. You cannot negate that.

**So the attitude to adopt is this:**

- I created it all including my present condition.
- I can improve it all.
- I am completely proud that I am God.
- I am not necessarily proud of the conditions that now prevail on Earth, but I intend to change that, and that is now my game or at least a part of my game.

- I acknowledge no power greater than myself, and I realize that all who would like me to grovel in gratitude to other Gods merely seek to reduce their power and my power and destroy the game.
- I am God.



## 26. MMS

You are nearing the end of this book on enlightenment. If you do not know about MMS, I should enlighten you about that. MMS stands for Master Mineral Solution. It is a solution that heals most of humanity's diseases.

My book, *The Miracle Mineral Supplement of the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, was printed in 2006. The date now as I write this chapter is January, 2009. Since the printing, about 40,000 copies have been sold. Hundreds of thousands of people around the world are now using MMS. Over 100,000 cases of malaria have been treated successfully. Most malaria patients are free of all malaria symptoms in four hours. Hundreds of cancer patients have been successfully treated. Many people who were given two weeks to live are doing fine and back at work. AIDS and more than 150 other diseases have been successfully treated to the point where people feel fine and are back at work. Money for blood tests has not been generally available, so many people have just been content that they are back to living their lives.

Now it is July 2011 as I write this paragraph, two years later. Since 2009, I have treated 800 cases of HIV/AIDS in Malawi. I have all the records. We were successful in more than 99 percent of all cases. More than 5 million people have used MMS at this time and hundreds of thousands of lives have been saved. I have started a worldwide Church. We now have more than 260 Ministers of Health in 60 countries worldwide. As with any church, our ministers heal people free of charge and depend on donations. Our Church is spiritual but not religious. If you believe in

- doing good deeds;
- healing the sick;
- always doing what is right;
- working for the freedom of mankind; and

- enlightening those who sleep,

then you can be a member of our church. As mentioned, the name of our Church is the Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing. Genesis means “beginning.” Two means it is the second beginning and Church of Health and Healing means that it is the beginning of a new world without diseases.

It was my decision to keep the MMS movement and now the Church on a grassroots level as long as possible. The governments under the control of various private interests have stopped all disease cures from ever seeing the light of day. Using MMS, sick people have been cured in dozens of countries without notifying the government. Of course, once the government found out, they always put a stop to it or at least did their best to stop it. It is now illegal to sell MMS in Canada, Australia, and New Zealand, and other countries are restricting it as much as they can. However, it is manufactured by various people for use as water purification. Anyone can then use it for any purpose they wish including curing themselves of disease.

The decision to keep MMS as a grassroots movement was based upon my research data proving that there are cures for all known diseases, but the governments and drug companies have prevented them from being used. As long as a government didn't know about MMS, they could not stop it. Now, with millions of people using it around the world, it will be very hard for them to stamp it out.

MMS is selling in many countries. The book has been published in German, Spanish, English, Polish, French, Estonian, Lithuanian, Ukrainian, Austrian, Greek, Bulgarian, Czech, Japanese, and Korean and is being translated into a number of other languages.

I have written a second book with hundreds of updated facts: *The Master Mineral Solution of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Millennium*.

In both books, I have given complete directions on how to make MMS doses and even how to manufacture MMS in your kitchen. I have not and will not restrict MMS sales or give

anyone an exclusive right to sell it. I give everyone and anyone free access to the use or sales of MMS. I do not ask anyone who sells MMS to pay me a royalty **so I do not receive any money from MMS sales**. The Church and seminar functions are financed by the books and videos and by the people who come to the seminars.

The books mentioned above can be purchased as printed copies or downloaded as eBooks at [www.miracleminal.org](http://www.miracleminal.org). Protocols for the use of MMS can be found at [www.jimhumble.biz](http://www.jimhumble.biz) and answers to many questions can be found at [www.mmsAnswers.com](http://www.mmsAnswers.com).

I have been testing a new Miracle Mineral and I call it MMS2. It is simple. So far, it has cured a number of prostate cancer cases and thousands of diseases including 200 cases of HIV. I have been testing it for three years and personally using it since 2005. It's one of those things that the medical people should have thought of years ago. Why didn't they? For the same reason they are not using MMS1: it cures diseases. There is very little money in curing things. What they have been doing for the past 100 years is keeping sick people returning for as long as possible. "Don't cure him" is their mode of operation. A complete false industry has grown up on the suffering and death of millions of people when that was never necessary.

The Church has just emailed out my newsletter about making MMS2 anywhere in the world from calcium hypochlorite, a swimming pool water purifier. It is safe. Now thousands of people throughout the world will be able to use it and take charge of their own health. To read the newsletter, you can go to [www.mmsnews.org](http://www.mmsnews.org) or [www.jimhumble.biz](http://www.jimhumble.biz). It is called Protocol 4000-MMS2. It gives complete details for healing 99 percent of humanity's diseases.

Andreas Kalker, our Bishop in Spain, has developed a new MMS that can be injected into muscles and used in IV infusions. It had been used to overcome diseases in 800 cows and saved many thousands of dollars in pharmaceuticals

normally used in cattle. The complete data will soon be put on the internet for the world.

I have already mentioned this, but let me say it again in case you missed it.

- It is more important that people agree on a subconscious level than on a conscious level, because what is agreed to subconsciously by the people in any area is what gets done in that area.

Our subconscious minds all mesh together to create the matrix. The more agreement there is, the more likely that those things will happen. For example, if you scare people with bombs and bullets, their fear makes them agree subconsciously only to bad things. They can't believe in good things under those conditions.

The religions tried to get things done, but everyone has a different idea of what God is, what your soul is, about hell, and about the worship of God. Most religions are more interested in saving your soul than in improving things on Earth, so that decreases their effectiveness in improving conditions. And an absence of conscious agreement often means negative subconscious agreement. The basic teaching of "You aren't responsible" has not been something that people could agree on. There has been no purity of intention in the religions because you cannot have a purity of intention that is not truth.

So, the most powerful people on Earth have come along with the purity of intentions to help mankind obtain greater health, and with that, greater cooperation. That is something anyone can understand and agree to. There are no lies there, nothing that people could disagree about. The fact that one person gets well is seen by many and those people can then agree that it can happen and then more people accept it, and more get well, and it snowballs.

These men are not spreading any religion, or even trying to make money. They don't need money, but everyone needs to pay their own way, so money will come in. Instead of people

having to pay out their entire savings, such as \$250,000, for treatment for an “incurable” disease, they might pay \$200 or less. For the poor, it is free, and, if not free, as little as \$0.25. In many parts of the world, it will be free to everyone for many years to come. Remember, I am not talking about something that will happen soon, but rather something that is happening right now and that will become better known very quickly.



## 27. The Truth Shall Make You Free

If you grew up anywhere on Earth, chances are you have heard the saying, “The truth shall make you free”. It may be the quote most often spoken in all time. Its truth seems so obvious that almost no one ever questions it. It is used in every philosophy and religion and by a dozen other groups. Every religion and philosophy believes that they already have the truth, which if used, will make us free. .

Do you know anyone who has been made free by the truth?

My question is:

- How does the truth make you free?

We are told in college that, for example, that any medical data proven by careful clinical trials is considered to be the truth. Most medical drugs have been through clinical trials, yet in the U.S. alone each year, 970,000 people die after taking a medical drug prescribed by a doctor. Does that sound to you as if anyone is being made free with that truth?

- That must not be the kind of truth that will make us free. So what is?

### Government Granted Freedom?

The American government and other governments around the world have used “the truth”, to remove most freedoms from their people. The U.S. government has for the most part suspended the Constitution and given itself powers to do anything to its citizens. If you question that, read the Patriot Act which was put into effect after and because of 9/11. Every year the USA uses what it considers “truths” to confiscate over 6 billion dollars of private property, cars, houses, bank accounts, and other valuables. There is no appeal to their confiscation. If you doubt this just read the “Civil Assets Forfeiture Reform Act of 2000, HR 1658”. Look it up on the Internet.

As I write these words a bill has already passed Congress that completely does away with the “Bill of Rights”. Of course it

must still pass the Senate and be signed by the President, but if it can pass Congress, it can go the rest of the way.

Many governments use “truth” which they call “facts” to increase the taxes on their citizens to 80% and more. Income tax is one thing, but when you add all the other taxes such as sales tax, property tax, gasoline tax, telephone tax, and so on, then see what you get. Governments theoretically are supposed to obtain greater and greater freedom and security for their people. Do you see anyone in the world becoming freer?

- So the kind of truth that governments have must not be the truth that will make us free.

### **What is the Truth That Will Make Us Free?**

In the world today, and throughout the history we know, some people have searched for what they believe to be the truth. Religions, of course, do not search as they believe that their beliefs are the absolute truth. To not believe that your religious belief is the truth would be a maximum insult to God. So religions have never searched for truths. Unfortunately, throughout the ages, there has never been a truth that has made anyone free. But we all know that the saying is true, “The truth shall make you free”. Millions have held that belief through the ages, but people have never really been free, except “free” to do what their government determines to be best, which is usually:

- Work hard and give your income to the government and put up with government torture and murder.

But what is the truth that people have always believed will make them free? What is it that makes people from all walks of life say, “Yes, the truth shall make us free”?

That truth is hard to find. For thousands of years, most people have thought that what they believe is the truth.

Well, what about all those people out there on Earth right now who are killing one another because of what they believe? Aren't they convinced that their beliefs are true? Whether

beliefs are cast as political philosophy or as religion, people are willing to kill for them because they think those beliefs are the truth.

So on Earth today, we are certainly not free. In several countries that you know about from the news and in others you may not have heard about yet, people are fighting and dying for freedom. The rest of us are still slaves. Check out the definition of a slave. There are millions convinced that being a slave is OK, and for many of them, it is.

- Just turn most of what you make or create over to the government and watch TV, and the government will keep you safe.

That is the belief, but how long will it last? Do you know of any truth that protects you from your government when they come to take your house and property? Probably not, and that is one of the reasons those people are out there dying as you read these words. They want to be free.

### **Freedom in Early America**

Actually, the only free men who have ever existed on Earth were the men of the United States from 1776 to approximately 1900 – about 125 years. Those men in 1776 were not really free, but it was as close as men have ever come to freedom, at least in the last few thousand years. They created the greatest country on Earth, and then income tax was imposed and then the Federal Reserve was imposed, and then hundreds of man-made laws were imposed. And then free men slept their freedom away.

The Constitution is great, but since it no longer protects Americans; they are now slaves. You can't look at it any other way. Americans pay more than 40% of their earnings to the government, but that is only income tax. What about all the other taxes. Government thugs can arrest them in their homes without a warrant and hold them in jail for any length of time. Most countries are similar. They use the idea of preventing terror attacks as a pretext to impose this oppression. I predict that by the time this book is published in about 2 months which will be February or March 2012 there will be no Bill of Rights in

the US, although the government will claim nothing has changed.

Governments allow freedom at the time they are formed, but they always create a law-making body, and within a few years, they have restricted most freedoms and are confiscating most of their citizens' income. That is just the way governments are, always the opposite of truth and freedom.

### **So What is Really the Truth That Will Make us Free?**

So if indeed "The Truth shall make you free," then what truth is it that can do that? The answer might just be here – the answer that wise men of all ages have talked about and promised us. So keep an open mind.

That truth that can make us free has been here through the ages, but people were not ready to see it. The belief system of each age prevented people from seeing it. Maybe the belief systems were designed to keep people from seeing it, or maybe that just happened. But it is not likely that it "just happened," since it was the religious, and political, and philosophical "truths" of each age that blocked people's view, and since these truths were created almost exclusively by those in authority. I'd have a tendency to believe that it was done deliberately to keep mankind in the mud.

This truth we are talking about is

- Not religion;
- Not philosophy;
- Not government; and
- Not politics.

It is more basic than the truth of any of those areas. There is a thing called Natural Law that has always existed wherever people live. This Natural Law just exists, and men have always known that they must do what is right. They have known that they cannot steal from their neighbor, or lie to their friends, or hurt their friends without a reason. These are natural laws that

exist between people and they are all simply stated as, “Always do what is right”.

There is a set of laws that are also natural laws that deal with the universe, such as gravity, and centrifugal force, and atomic energy, but the natural laws we refer to are probably just as basic and these are the laws that exist and have always existed between people.

During the 11<sup>th</sup> and 12<sup>th</sup> centuries, the courts of England began seeking to put Natural Law into words – not necessarily written words, but they set precedents in the courts. When natural law was stated in words it became known as Common Law. Then in the 12<sup>th</sup> century several British noblemen got together and wrote up a document called the Magna Carta which is probably the best-known document of all time. It did a very good job of stating natural laws between people which when written become Common Law.

### **What is Common Law?**

No created laws or rules are needed from religion, philosophy, government or politics because Common Law, which came from stating natural law, reflects the way things actually are. Common Law once we know it gives us a practical and logical way to live with one another and the courts of the land can recognize this and enforce it when necessary. For example, everyone knows that stealing is wrong – we don't need congress to tell us that.

Common Law says that you should have the right to do anything you wish, as long as it does not hurt another or interfere with the rights of another. That doesn't mean that everyone goes helter skelter doing anything they wish. Common Law provides for handling those who hurt others. It is based on common sense and logic.

- You can't hurt your neighbor or use your neighbor's car. That's just logical. We don't need statutes made by Congress for us to see that.

### **Common Law Contracts**

Common Law teaches us what a contract is and that most commerce can be handled with ethical contracts between people and companies. Contracts make many things possible. A contract must have four things:

- Full disclosure of everything concerning the contract;
- Equal consideration for all the parties to the contract;
- Lawful terms, according to Common Law; and
- Mutual intent of the parties.

If any of these things are absent, there is no contract. Also, the famous “small print” is unenforceable because you might not read it and thus full disclosure would not have happened. Natural law rules common law contracts. Simply stated, always do what is right.

### **The Role of Juries**

Common Law is right, logical, and practical. It distinguishes between laws and statutes, laws being the basic arrangements that establish validity for necessary public entities such as courts, police, and government officials; and statutes being the plethora of detailed rules passed by a legislative body over the decades to control the population. (For more, please see the links under *Learning About Common Law*.)

Under Common Law, statutes from a law-making body are not required except for occasional terrible situations, and then the statutes are suggestions, not requirements that can send you to prison. What would send you to prison in a free country would be practical and logical. And who determines the relevant law? It is the jury. They determine guilt and appropriate penalties and that is supposed to be exactly how juries are run even now in the U.S. and English-speaking countries, but it seldom happens because judges never explain to a jury its exact duties.

Common Law is what we humans see as practical and right. It is law that states how things really are. For example, you must

pay for things you buy. If you do go to court for anything, what you and the judge and jury do is figure out what is right and practical – the right thing to do. You don't need a hundred thousand laws enacted by Congress. Nor do precedents matter – only what is right and just.

- The truth that can make us free is us understanding what is right, practical, and logical and then setting things up to follow that understanding. Mainly people must take the responsibility to be free.

The courts are already required to do this. Anytime you are arrested or given a traffic ticket or cited for having the wrong paint on your house, or a thousand other things, you can right now at this time ask for, and receive, judgment by Common Law. But you must know the procedures. There are people who do know them and there are websites about how to conduct a lawsuit under Common Law.

### **Learning about Common Law**

A good place to start in educating yourself about Common Law might be [www.freemanitoba.com](http://www.freemanitoba.com). It offers many eye-opening videos such as:

- [An interview with a Canadian man in exile](#) because of charges that he “broke the law” by successfully curing many people of cancer and other serious diseases through use of cannabis;
- Film of a [Common Law practitioner in court](#) who, by following Common Law procedures, forces the Judge to leave the courtroom, allowing him to announce his own case as “dismissed with prejudice,” meaning that it cannot be re-filed.
- A “freeman of the land” explaining [the difference between laws and statutes](#).

Another starting place might be [this long and well-referenced page](#) giving basic definitions and principles of Common Law, such as the two basic common laws, Free Sovereign Citizens, and Free vs. Unfree.

You might also become another of the over 10 million people who have watched the movie [Zeitgeist: Moving Forward](#), released by its creator for free consumption earlier this year. The [Zeitgeist website](#) offers links to the original movie and other related movies, all dealing with the top-to-bottom corruption in current societies.

## The Magna Carta

Common Law is pretty much written up and can be cited. You may have heard of [the Magna Carta](#), a set of rules similar to our Constitution that some noble Englishmen wrote and forced King John to sign at Runnymede in 1215 under threat of having his head cut off. “Magna Carta” means “Great Charter”. They also had the Pope sign it. Neither the King nor the Pope had any plan to honor their signatures, but they both died before they could invalidate them.

The Magna Carta is cited by our Constitution, which makes it relevant in the USA. Congress cannot suspend Common Law and thus the Patriot Act suspending our freedom cannot suspend Common Law. Common Law is how things are, how things really work – you simply cannot borrow your neighbor’s car without asking him and Congress cannot change that by creating a statute.

So it might take some work, but in the long run, the truth that can make us free is Common Law. It is simple, practical, and logical, the way things actually are, and it should govern the way we live. The world could live by this information, this truth of how things really are. If you really want to know the Common Law in any area, it is written in Black’s Law dictionary (earlier versions). But the best known version is the Magna Carta. [You can read the Magna Carta online](#) and you will probably find it to be pretty much the way you might expect, since we already have a good idea of what is right and wrong. Because it was written in the 13<sup>th</sup> century, it might mention circumstances you may not have thought of. You can [see it and watch videos about it](#).

I know, I know, we all hoped that the truth that will make us free would drop from the sky in parchment rolls, possibly signed by

God. But nobody down through the ages has received that wonderful truth on parchment rolls. However, Common Law is practical and logical and we will just have to make it do the trick for us.

- **Common law is probably the most wonderful thing that humanity has. It makes it possible for us to create our own freedom without waiting for someone else to come and save us. The truth that can make us free is here now.**

But there is more. Common Law is only part of the story of becoming free. There is a legal technology that will be taught by the Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing that is even more powerful than Common Law and this technology works in any country. This technology teaches us how to take responsibility for things that we might be accused of, without going to court. This is only preliminary information. More data will be announced by the Church.

## **So - One Last Problem**

That leaves us with one final problem. We will have to take responsibility for making Common Law happen. If we want freedom, it will be up to all of us to make it happen. Everyone must understand and use Common Law. That means we will all have to take more responsibility on ourselves and work towards that happening. We must learn about Common Law and talk with people and persuade them to learn about Common Law. Please use some of the links above.

The Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing will be working to get this information out to the public worldwide. You can help just by becoming a member of our Church. Our ID card specifically states that our members cannot be forced to accept vaccinations and it also helps you with other health issues.

Perhaps it would have been nice if someone from another dimension or another galaxy, maybe even Jesus, had come to

save us. But it isn't likely. Those beings know that we have the truth and knowledge here on earth, now, to save ourselves. They would never come to save us just for the fun of it and end up making us into slaves yet again. No. If they exist, I think they will save us by allowing us to be responsible for ourselves.

The promises given through the ages that humanity would somehow reach a new level or a new level of enlightenment at the beginning of the third millennium were made by those who did not know exactly what was going to happen. Some of them might have believed that someone would come to save us. But if you think about it, you'll see that if someone saves us, then we are not being responsible for ourselves. We will be depending on someone else. If those higher beings exist, they can best help us by not interfering, and thus ensuring that we save ourselves.

Well, sorry to kill humanity's most precious dream that someone else will save us, but it is time we grew up. It's time we took responsibility for ourselves, and that means all of us.

KEEP IN MIND THAT WE DO NOT SUGGEST REVOLUTION OR REVOLT OR EVEN PEACEFUL DEMONSTRATIONS. ALL WE MUST DO IS LEARN TO USE THE COURTS TO CLAIM OUR FREEDOM. THE LAWS ARE THERE. IT'S UP TO US TO USE THEM. IT'S SIMPLY EDUCATING OURSELVES AND OUR CHILDREN. WHEN WE USE THE COURTS TO CLAIM OUR FREEDOM, HOW CAN THE GOVERNMENT POSSIBLY OBJECT TO US USING THE LAW OF THE COURTS.

## **HOW YOU CAN BECOME FREE NOW!**

This is sort of another secret of Enlightenment. Don't miss it. Down through the ages there has been another saying, not nearly as popular as, The Truth Can Make You Free, but still wise men seeking the truth have often regarded it as important and/or critical. For mankind this is probably the most important part of this book.

The saying is, "With freedom comes Responsibility." And then they point to the Freemen of the USA who have lost their

freedom by not accepting enough responsibility for it and they let it slip away from them. Which indeed was true, but there is more to it.

Now this is the critical point and secret. The truth is that the saying is 180 degrees wrong. It is exactly backwards. The actual truth is, "With Responsibility comes Freedom."

I learned that when I was a kid in the 5<sup>th</sup> grade. When I accepted the responsibility for helping the other children get across the highway from the school, my teachers allowed me much more freedom than the other kids. But it happens with almost everyone. The more responsibility that anyone takes the more people in the area allow them freedom. Policemen take responsibility for the safety of the community and with that responsibility people allow them more freedom. Of course, many policemen abuse their responsibility, but if you will remember the old sheriffs and home town policemen, they always had more freedom than the normal people and where they didn't abuse it, people were happy to see them exercise their freedom.

So now look at the freedom you can obtain in life by accepting more and more responsibility. Number one: If you will accept the responsibility for learning how to use MMS (Master Mineral Solution) till you know all the details, you and your family can remain free of disease for the rest of your lives. That is a freedom worth having.

Number two area of responsibility: Acceptance in your life. Read the Acceptance and Healing Chapter again. If you can accept things in your life that would otherwise upset you, then you are taking a lot more responsibility for your life instead of reacting irresponsibly then your freedom for life will be 100 fold. You will be free from the thousands of things that would upset most people and over a few years life will be a great deal more fun, because it is a great deal more free.

Finally, at least for now, the Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing is putting the data together right now with which they will help their members remain free of legal matters and out of court. This technology works in all countries and it shows one

how to accept responsibility for legal matters in a manner that keeps one free of the courts. It is a very specialized technology and in the long run people always prefer someone who accepts responsibility for whatever is wrong. This does not mean he offers to accept guilt, but rather to just be responsible. The responsibility technology always works and makes everything fair for all parties.

This technology offers tremendous freedom for all those who use it or have it available to them. It offers freedom from government interference, from the police and from the courts. Unfortunately it cannot always change a deadly oppressive government that our government is promising to be, but it will help change things a great deal. We will have to see how things work out, because now millions of people are waking up every year.



## 28. Religions: The False Games

This chapter is only for the readers of this book. It is not meant to make fun of or insult, or slur religions or religious people in any way. It is simply to show the logic of religion, or its absence from this book's point of view. If you are a religious person, this chapter will probably upset you, unless you are looking for truth. The best course might be to skip it if you are religious. Actually, if you are religious, the best course would have been to skip the whole book. At any rate, there are some things you can use in this book, but not this chapter.

I wrote this chapter for only a few people, and I am sure those people will recognize themselves when they read it. Earth will need their help. So please contact me when you can at [jhbeloved@gmail.com](mailto:jhbeloved@gmail.com).

Many games on Earth have been created with some semblance of logic. They are based on facts. For example:

- A person starts a company installing replacement water heaters. Lots of facts and logic and action make the company (game) a success.
- Another person enjoys playing golf. Either he can hit the ball or he can't. Lying about it doesn't improve his game. So with truthfulness and integrity he can have some real fun competing or just improving his game.

Let me start off by pointing out that the Christians are still out killing people *en masse*. It continues today in several African countries, thousands being killed by Christians. In the industrial nations, where religion has been taken out of government, the direct killing has stopped, although they have other ways of killing people.

### **Dishonesty in the Christian Religion**

Most of the following applies to all religions, but I talk mainly about Christianity.

### **Dishonest Point #1**

- **The Bible is a book of peace and good will.**

It has been said that the Bible is the most popular book of all time and that is probably true. What is not true is that the Bible brings peace and good will and understanding. In fact, those who have believed in and used the Bible are responsible for more wars and more deaths than the believers of any other book, with the exception of maybe the Communist Manifesto and the Koran.

- The dishonesty is in not facing that fact. The facts prove it is not a book of peace and never has been. No doubt Christians want it to be a book of peace and that is admirable, but let's not pretend it is when the facts of history indicate otherwise.

If you think it will teach you how to run your life, you really do have some problems. You can come up with all the standard arguments, like, "It's not the Bible that's the problem, but people's interpretation of it," and countless other arguments throughout history. But all fail to explain away the wars and torture and death.

I've heard the argument that the Bible is so valuable, like gold, that people fight for it. But it has always been available to those in power, and to most anyone else who really wanted to read it. No, the death toll is a fact of history.

There is no doubt in my mind that this book has some truth in it. But still there is something wrong – terribly wrong, or the death toll wouldn't be so high. So handle it with care. That book gives people a reason to be irresponsible. Even today there are people who are prepared to kill because of some conviction they have acquired from the Bible.

The Old World has been replete with hangings, murder, torture and death, and even genocide, in the name of the Bible. The New World was populated largely by criminals from the Old World who were tired of it all.

- When I say *criminals*, I refer to anyone who used the Bible to justify torture or war. They may not have been considered criminals at the time, but they were criminals just the same.

Our Constitution separated religion from politics and government and we became the greatest country the world has ever known. Other prosperous countries have mimicked us in many ways, especially regarding religion and politics.

The Bible has been used by criminals to justify evil deeds for nearly 2000 years. They were able to convince people they were in the right because they waved the Bible. The fact remains that only where religion has been removed from government has the world advanced.

The main reason for this is that the main teaching of the Bible says that God created it all and that He has a plan for each person. It basically says God is responsible, and that man has no power. It teaches that everything is God's plan and that He will return to punish the bad guys.

### **Dishonest Point #2**

- **The Bible was written by God—or at least by men who were influenced by God.**

Really? What proof exists? The answer is that there is not a shred of proof that the Bible was written by God or even by men influenced by God. It is just an idea that exists. Christians would like to believe it was written by God, so they will quote all kinds of things that they believe are proof, but none of them are proof. There comes a point where they must either believe blatant lies or admit that no proof exists that the Bible was written by God.

- The dishonesty is in continuing to claim that there is proof that the Bible was written by God.

The honest thing would be to say that we **believe** it was written by God, but we realize there is no proof. Religious people continue to demonstrate that they cannot reason logically.

### Dishonest Point #3

- **There is tremendous proof that God exists.**

Well, this is not to argue the existence of God. In this particular argument I don't care if he exists or not, *but, in fact, there is not one single shred of proof that God exists.* That's why it is so dishonest. If the Christians would merely say, "I have faith that God exists," that would be honest. But, no, they must say that the evidence of God is everywhere and that the Bible offers much proof. What proof? Well, Jesus came back to life, and he brought a man back to life. That proves that he is God. Really! What doctor on the scene signed a certificate of death for either case? Who notarized statements of them being seen alive again?

We know that the group who gave evidence has proven that it will kill and steal for its own benefit, as will all races. But there is more evidence that Elvis Presley rose from the dead than Jesus. Is he a God too? But even if he did rise from the dead, does that prove he is God? Not in my view. There have been books written about true miracles and many of them can be proven, but they still don't prove that the people were Gods or that the miracles were done by God.

Many believe that God exists, and I have no argument with what they believe, just with what they claim to be the truth. The Bible was written by men. Many would like to believe that it was inspired by God, but no proof of that exists. Only beliefs and faith exist.

When you walk outside and see a beautiful rose, it might be nice to think that is proof that God exists, but, in fact, it is not, and it is dishonest to claim that it is. (The God of the Bible is infinitely more complex than the rose, and thus infinitely less likely to exist.)



Maybe some cosmic children were playing in the vast nothingness and planted a seed from which this universe grew. The result of the seed was evolution toward beauty or some such thing. Or maybe we are all Gods come here to play in a garden of forgetfulness. There are thousands of possibilities. Maybe the universe itself is God. Maybe the universe is a vast mind in which we are all only dreams of that mind. Actually there are millions of possibilities. Again, religious people continue to demonstrate that they cannot reason logically.

#### **Dishonest Point #4**

- **Jesus died for our sins and this was the greatest sacrifice that can be made for man.**

“For God so loved the world that he gave his only-begotten Son.” For nearly 2000 years, Christians have pretended or believed that this is the greatest thing that has ever happened. They have pretended that God made the ultimate sacrifice. But how could that be? How can it be a sacrifice for the ultimate God of all creation, or his Son, to die on a cross? Jesus knew that he would be with God in heaven the same minute he died. His Father knew He wasn't losing Him and they would soon be together.

For a God of such power to die on the cross would be nothing worse than you having a sneezing fit for 30 seconds. To claim that it was a magnificent thing and a great sacrifice is extremely dishonest, and, in addition, it is disrespectful to all the soldiers who died in wars of our country. Those men died so that you can live in a free country, and they had no knowledge or proof that they would ever be alive again, and their parents never saw them again. Those men really gave their lives for you and me, but Jesus was merely dead for three days, according to the Bible. No great sacrifice. He died on the cross and was dead for three days, and during those days he was in heaven. How is that a sacrifice?

Our servicemen who died will never see their parents again. That is a much greater sacrifice than Jesus made, and they should be rated above Jesus as far as sacrifices are

concerned. If God's son had died and stayed dead forever, then you might talk about a sacrifice. Still, even then an infinite God would be able to do something to overcome even that terrible thing. There is no disaster that an infinite God could not overcome or undo. But besides that fact, Jesus was only dead for three days, and during that time he was in heaven with his Father. Three days in heaven with his Father, that's a short vacation. How do you call that a huge sacrifice?

One can't have it both ways. One can't claim his God is infinite and can do anything, and then claim that being in heaven three days was a sacrifice. That's not facing the facts. If one has said his God is all powerful, then he must know that this God can overcome anything that happens with no problem, and thus any sacrifice that he makes, he can nullify at any time he chooses. One should have the ability to observe that it really isn't a sacrifice. It would be one choice or some sort of game that God is playing.

### **Dishonest Point #5**

- **God gave us free will.**

This is another point where Christians want their belief to be logical in two opposing ways. They want a God who has infinite powers and knows everything that ever happened or ever will happen; but they also want a God who creates everyone with free will. Again it is a point where they cannot be honest with themselves. It would be easy enough to face the facts a dozen different ways, such as saying, "Well, God is infinite and all powerful, but He doesn't know all of the future." But if God knows what you will choose long before you are created, He is creating you to do what He knows you will do.

Besides that, if any being is the way that God created him to be, God still prevents free will. Even if God created a neutral, a nothing being and allowed that being to create all of his own ideas himself and did not influence that being, He is still preventing free will.

God says, "If you don't live as I say, you go to hell forever. If you don't love Me with all your heart, mind, and soul, you will

go to hell.” How can you call that freedom to do what you want? Free will is a free choice, not coercion to do what God wants. But it is worse than that. God knows, millions of years before He ever created you, that you are going to hell (if you are) and knowing that, He still created you. In that case, he actually created you to go to hell. He knew you were going to hell before He created you.

Aside from the point of why He would do that, why would He create all that pain for no reason? If He knew before He created you what you will do, then he created you to do what he knew you would do. So that was foreordained and cannot be called free will—you are free to do only what He knows you are going to do. If God were all-powerful, why would He create a being that does not worship him, if that is what He wants? He wants only those who worship Him. The dishonesty here is for a person to insist that he has free will, even though he knows that if he doesn't follow God's directions, he will go to hell for eternity. That is not much freedom of choice.

If a person used this kind of logic in any field but religion, he would be the laughing stock of that field of knowledge. A being that has not created himself is what his creator created him to be. It cannot be otherwise. For millennia, spiritual, philosophical, and religious people have wanted to have their God, or some higher being, able to create them with free will. But it isn't possible. If you have free will, you created yourself—there is no way around it. And you did. You are God. You created yourself, and you have free will.

### **Dishonest Point #6**

- **“I know that my God lives.”**

Christians are fond of saying this or some similar statement. But no matter how loud and often they say the word “know,” it is still only a belief when used in the way they use it. Christians have somehow convinced themselves that the truth is what they believe. They have the idea that they can change a belief into truth. They refuse to look at the fact that a belief may or may not be truth.

Of course, this generality is true of the believers of any philosophy, religion or cult. Still, it is a dishonesty that they all play on themselves first, and then try to push onto the world. But a belief may or may not be the truth. The honest way for a Christian to profess this idea would be to say, "I believe in God. I know there is no proof, but I have faith."

The idea that one's belief is true is held by all the other religions, cults, and philosophies. Had they, over the past 2000, admitted to themselves that a belief is not truth and that their faith is what carried them along, they would not have killed those thousands upon thousands of non-believers. Only people who are willing to lie to themselves will go out and kill and do all those other terrible things. A belief that has no proof may or may not be true and without proof, one will never know for sure. The lie is that one can know the truth for sure without proof. As long as Muslims can say, "What I believe is the absolute truth," they can kill the rest of us with impunity.

On the other hand, those who say, "I believe, but I know there is no proof," do not have enough conviction to kill for those beliefs. Children are taught this kind of thinking (what I believe = the truth). Soon, they can't differentiate between beliefs and the truth. When they are older, they still can't differentiate.

Not too long ago, I approached a Christian and said, "You didn't keep your agreement with me," which, in fact, he had not. You know what he said? He said, "So what? I don't have to keep those kinds of agreements." A Christian has to lie to himself about so many different ideas that it soon gets to the point where he cannot differentiate between lying to himself and lying to other people.

### **Dishonest Point #7**

- **God's plan.**

God's plan is one more belief on Earth that continues throughout almost every religion on earth. It is a universal belief that most human beings cannot break loose from. There is little doubt that this is a basic concept of all Pieces and Pawns that are a part of the game here on Earth. It is probably the most

revered of all religious concepts. Even many who do not believe in the basic religions and who understand past lives, still hold on to this one concept that someone or something on a higher level has a plan for each of us and for Earth itself—and that this plan is in progress.

But let's look at this concept. If one believes that a higher power has a plan for Earth, then it would seem to follow that this higher power must have had the plan for thousands of years. That seems to be true. Most people believe that. The Bible mentions such plans and even gives the details of things to come, all by God's plan.

Let us examine the plans. Look at what has been happening on Earth over the past 10,000 years. According to all these beliefs, the course of history must have followed God's plan, as we know that God is all-powerful. It is doubtful that he has failed for the past 10,000 years. So what has been the "course of history?"



We all know the general course of history. It has been wars, torture, murder, killing, and destruction. Cities have been destroyed, genocide has been the order of the decade, children have been butchered, and no one's life has ever gone untouched by the slaughter, regardless of the age in which they might have lived.

Can you believe that a God or any power would make those plans? Or are you going to say that God made good plans and people made them bad? That still proves that God is a poor planner, as he should include the possibility that people might make his plans bad. But that isn't the point. If you believe that God has a plan for Earth and for each person, you must be a bit depressed by now, as nothing has gone according to his plan, unless you believe that God wants to see all the killing and torture.

I'll say right now, we need a new planner because the present one is killing us. We need a planner who will bring peace to

Earth rather than killing and murder and death, as the present plan is bringing. We need a plan that will wake us up and bring some maturity to our civilizations. As long as people believe that God has it all planned, they will never make their own plans. So we exist without a plan to bring peace to Earth and to the Galaxy. But actually, that isn't the case. A man-made plan is in place and is beginning to be implemented. That's the Genesis 2 Church of Health and Healing.

### **Further Arguments Concerning Religion**

We've wound up on this small planet on the edge of a medium-sized galaxy in a somewhat vast universe. We're here, and often, instead of playing and enjoying life, we get serious and begin killing one another. One of the main reasons, if not the main reason, that we do this is religion.

For thousands of years, all the major religions have supported killing one another and they still do. There has never been a war in which both sides did not believe that God supported their cause. It is an obvious untruth, as very seldom do both sides win. The fact is that very few of the men in any war would have ever killed a single person if they did not believe that their God approved of such action.

Man has created God in his (man's) own image. With all the killings and intolerance in religions, one would think that man would have rejected religion long ago. Civilizations have succeeded to the extent that they have rejected religion. For example, the USA became the greatest civilization on Earth after the Constitution removed all religion from government.

This universe is vast. On a clear night, look up at the thousands of stars—they all belong to our galaxy. There are more than 100 million stars, greater or lesser than our sun, in our galaxy, known as the Milky Way. One of the stars we can see is not really a star but a full galaxy as big as our own. It is known as the Andromeda Galaxy, and it is our nearest galaxy neighbor. In that galaxy, there are also more than 100 million stars. And guess what, there are hundreds of billions of galaxies, each nearly as great, or greater than, our own. The fantastic

vastness of the universe is really beyond human understanding.

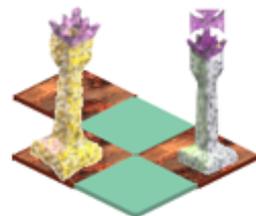
There are now a number of theories that predict other universes beyond this one, probably with other laws and other things beyond our imagination. The point is, here we are on a tiny planet, spinning around a medium-sized star, way out on the edge of a medium-sized galaxy, that is one of more than 100 billion galaxies. Would I believe that the God that made all this is going to be taking the time to direct my life? If he is, it sorely disappoints me.

A God so great as to have created the billions of planets that must exist in this universe would be much greater than to be worrying with a few people here on earth. If you buy the religious theory, you must believe God is allowing a few million people on Earth to kill one another, to torture one another, or to die of a thousand and one different traumas just to allow these people to “evolve,” or learn certain lessons all because He didn’t create them the way He wanted them in the first place. And if we would believe as we are taught, God is seeking to direct each one of these people, and He sees their pain. There must be many trillions of people (beings) in this universe and if He is seeking to direct each individual on Earth, then He must be seeking to direct each one of the trillions of people throughout the universe. It’s staggering how many failures God is having daily, because very few of those people are doing as God directs. Does anyone see any poor logic here?

Read further for the answer to why we haven’t been able to control it all yet.

### **Why God Created Man**

The main reason given as to why God created man and put him here on Earth was to finally have people living in heaven with Him. God wanted people who would worship Him and be good people of their



own free will, so He has given the people He created a chance to prove that they are worthy.

So God was lonely and wanted company, and that's why He created Man? The argument against this is that God is supposed to be supreme and to have created everything. In that case, why would God create the emotion of loneliness, which is somewhat painful? There would be no point in a God creating pain for Himself.

The above reasoning gives no valid reason why God would create pain for Himself, or why He would create a desire to have company—or, for that matter, why God would create in Himself the vanity that wanted people to worship him. One would think that the company of someone who is not your equal would be of little value, especially the company of someone you have created. In order for a God to desire company, he would have to create the desire, and no reason is given for him to create that desire. So when a sculptor creates a statue does it make sense for him to want that statue to worship him because he created it? Does an engineer who creates a new car wish to have that car worship him? We create in God stupid desires that we would never imagine for ourselves.

### **Evolution: Did it Happen?**

Even if you believe in God, you have to have some degree of reasoning ability. If God does exist, there is no possibility of evolution not happening. If you believe the Bible's concept of God, you must believe that God created everything in the universe. The Bible says, God created the Heavens and the Earth and the Earth was without form and it was dark. He then created light (the sun) and gave form to the Earth. What do you have there? The process of evolution. The Earth changed from no form to form and from dark to light.

Then God created the animals. But did He create a squirrel or a fish or a pig without evolution, when there had never been such animals before in the universe? Do you think that it could be created without evolution? He first had to create a single cell and then a thousand different kinds of cells and put them all

together to make a squirrel. He had to decide on how each of those cells would interact with the other cells. But a squirrel had never been conceived before, so God had to decide on the color of each cell and the function of the teeth and of the eyes and so forth.

It doesn't matter if God took a second or a thousand years in going from one point to the next with that squirrel — He had to evolve that squirrel somehow in the real universe or in his own mind. It doesn't matter how it happened. The fact is, God or something had to create each thing that exists in this universe, and everything in this universe changes. If God created this universe, He did not create it fully functioning as it is now, because it has been changing for 13 billion years since it was created. You can't deny this; there is too much evidence that it has been changing. It didn't come off the drawing board totally functioning as it is now. It continued to change and that is evolution—from what it was to what it is now.

The universe evolved from his first ideas of it. The Bible says that. He didn't have any universe one instant and a fully-fledged universe the next. He thought about it and planned it, so it evolved either in his mind or in actuality. His own body didn't just spring into existence. His body had the shape it had from evolving. There was no light at first, so what would be the purpose of eyes? There was no air to breathe, so what would be the purpose of lungs? Either God's body evolved according to those things He created like air, light, gravity, legs to move His body around on some planet, or land He created, and so forth—or He evolved other bodies as He created things.

If He evolved His own body and finally made men and women, then possibly there was no evolution here on earth. In that case, the evolution was in heaven with God's body. But there really had to be an evolution at some time or another. Why this kind of a universe? Why not one where everyone has wings and the entire universe is filled with air and there are trees that grow on air and one flies from tree to tree in any direction for billions of miles or light years?

There are thousands or millions of different ways one could make a universe, but this universe is the way it is because it evolved that way. It doesn't matter if it evolved in God's mind first, or He had it evolve externally. The fact is, any universe would have to evolve to reach the situation that now exists. All things have had to evolve to the point that they are now. That is true even if they were created by God or a God. If everything was still exactly as it was at the beginning of time, we could say nothing has evolved—but then, nothing is the same as it was yesterday, much less the beginning of time, and therefore it has evolved.

I doubt that a God would take the time to change each tiny thing continuously. I rather believe that he would set things up so that they changed of their own accord, and thus you have evolution. And of course, that is exactly what we, the Players, did. The point I'm making is why do we even have an argument about evolution? It had to have happened and it is continuing to happen all the time as long as the universe exists.

That argument does not prove or disprove God's existence. However, it does prove the absence of reason in religion. Evolution cannot prove or disprove God's existence. Things are always in the process of changing. If there were any logic in religion, its proponents would have seized on the idea of evolution to prove God's existence, instead of fighting for a completely illogical idea.

But let me add one small thought here. Since God is supposed to be eternal and forever, no doubt he would have created other universes and other games. That being the case, if he added the directions for evolution into the basic laws of this universe, same as the basic laws of physics that created our solar system, then evolution would happen according to the laws of evolution. I assume that is what happened.

### **God's Plan**

All religious people believe that God has a plan for Earth and even for each individual life. So if there is a God like the Bible describes, then one must believe in a plan—that is, a plan that

God has for Earth. One must then believe that the plan is in progress and that things are going according to God's plan. How could things not go according to God's plan when God is infallible and cannot be wrong? We must then assume that God planned that thousands of children would die each day and that thousands of people would starve to death and thousands more would die of debilitating diseases. If you have ever seen someone die of Alzheimer's disease, you would wonder about God's plan. If the Earth is going according to God's plan, I would say that His plan is a dismal failure at this time.

God is sold as a loving, wonderful, compassionate God, but how can anyone accept that idea when He knows of all the terrible things continually happening on Earth? God can stop them any time he wants, according to the belief. So why create all the evil and pain and suffering? Since God created everything, he must have also created evil. Why?

So along comes a person who never bothers to think. He fears death or some such thing, and then he thinks he has come to grips with the question of God and why God allows such things, and finally he buys it all. He believes finally that God has directed his whole life and has led him to this final truth. In this vast universe of trillions of planets and stars, is God going to take time to direct a tiny little person's life? For what purpose? So He can have people to live with Him for eternity and worship Him?

If you buy that, then there is no point in reading this discussion. Start praying now. God has to create the suffering of millions to have people live with Him. It would be a reasonable idea, almost, if God was not able to create good people at will. But according to this belief he can do anything. Why create evil at all? What's the point?

If evil happened to exist without God's creation or permission, maybe there would be some point in testing people to see if they could resist evil. But since God created it all, why create all the suffering? One simply doesn't need to create evil. None of the arguments make sense, and religious leaders have been

saying for all time that it doesn't need to make sense; just keep the faith, baby. They always have an answer, but seldom logic.

### **Bible Basics**

The Children of Israel were God's chosen people. So God led them almost personally. While they were in the desert, He provided a pillar of fire by night and a cloud by day. But the Children of Israel decided to worship a golden cow while they were being led away from slavery by God. This really irritated Moses so he broke the stone on which the Ten Commandments were written by God—the only thing ever written by God. It would seem that the Children of Israel were a poor choice as a favorite people.

God made all these people. He knew in advance everything they would do. He knows everything you have done and will do in the future. If you are going to fail him and wind up going to hell, He already knows that.

So, if you are going to be bad and go to hell, and He already knows that, what is the point of Him creating you? Is it to make the good guys look good? Is it so that He can have the good guys sitting around realizing how lucky they are that they missed hell, or is it that God wants to observe your pain? I cannot come up with any logic that makes the slightest bit of sense to explain why an all-knowing God would create people whom He knows will fail, and then punish them for the failure.

Let's look at the logic of this. Let's say you are God. You want people to worship you of their own choice.

So you create some people and command them to love you with all their soul. But you want them to choose to obey that command, so you say to them, "If you do not obey that command, I will send you to hell." Well, in actuality, you really send yourself to hell by not obeying that command. What kind of a choice is that?



You also say to these people, “If you do any of the evil that I have created, you will send yourself to hell.” So what you are really doing as God is putting a gun to these people’s heads and saying, “If you do not choose to love me, I pull the trigger.” What kind of a choice is that?

Still, the preachers claim that you have a choice. You can choose to go to heaven or you can choose to go to hell. Isn’t that a hell of a choice, so to speak? The same choice is available to the man standing on the edge of a thousand foot cliff with a gun pointing at him. The person with the gun is saying, “Choose to kneel and worship me, or be shot and fall over the cliff.” It’s a choice, but not one that would stand up as a choice in a court of law. Mankind has become so used to this poor logic that even non-religious people are afraid to argue about it.

The point I am trying to cover is that the basis of these religions has no logic. In order to be a Christian, you must be dishonest with yourself. You can read it, but you cannot make sense out of any of it. Finally, you have to accept it with faith and pretend it is logical and true. Lots of people don’t buy it. I would think that one must be carrying a great deal of guilt to accept such illogic.

### **Is God All-Knowing?**

Remember, according to religion, God knows everything that ever will be or ever has been. He knows everything that ever will happen. People cannot tell you the reason for God’s existence. Why would any being want to exist who knew everything, including what will happen? Does anyone see the illogic? Here is a God that knows everything, loving those He is going to punish in some terrible way. He knew millions of years before he created them that He was going to send them to outer darkness (or to hellfire, depending on what sect you belong to). There He is, sitting on a throne or some such thing, knowing everything that is going to happen today and tomorrow, but still going through with it all, still attempting to direct your path, it would seem, not for his benefit, but maybe for ours.

## God's Affliction

In the Ten Commandments God says, "Thou shalt have no other God before me," and "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, mind, and strength." It is mentioned that you can go to hell for breaking any of the Ten Commandments. He also says, "I the Lord thy God am a jealous God." He admits to it. He shows the need for revenge and jealousy that exceeds the most base of human beings. So why would anyone worship such a God? It doesn't make a lot of sense. This is only part of the argument. We could go on and on for a whole book, but I am sure that you already have the idea. Maybe you already knew these arguments.

I've already said it, but let me say it again. The Creator is always responsible to his creations for their imperfections. It is not and cannot be the other way around. Morality, honesty, integrity, love, and all the other positive attributes come from within you. It is your responsibility to create and have these things. But Christians believe that these things come from God.



The problem is that down through the centuries, those who have relegated the responsibility for these things to God have been the ones who killed, tortured, and started wars, more so than any other group. Those who believe they need God to tell them what is right and wrong never seem to get it right. The reason is that each person must accept responsibility for creating those things for himself and he must never expect them to come from somewhere else.

## The Religious Plague

Religion prevents people from taking responsibility for themselves. One cannot claim to be doing God's will and still take total responsibility for his life. Either you are doing what you want, or doing what God wants. You might say that you want what God wants. But there is confusion there because one does not always know what God wants. Sometimes we think we know, but there is always a question.

The worst thing that religion does to people is prevent the proper training of children. Religion teaches us that we are created by God with free will and that we must be good and do things right using our free will. The fact is, however, we are as we are taught when young, mostly before six years old. (Please see Chapter 21 on “World Peace.”) Anywhere on Earth you travel, you will find that the basic beliefs and concepts were taught to children before they were six years old.

So, because religion will never allow children to be taught logical thinking, we have a tremendous problem. We have billions of people who cannot think and who cannot be trained to think logically. So we have wars and hate and the other problems of mankind. It doesn't take people who love, or who have faith in God, or who believe in God to bring about understanding and peace. It takes people who can think logically, people who understand that man is responsible for man, that we will always have what we have created, and that we cannot escape what we are creating, either by doing something or by refusing to do something.

As always with love,

Bishop Jim Humble

# INDEX

## A

**acceptance** 134–49  
Africa 13, 57, 70, 83, 85, 86, 157, 164,  
225  
AIDS 43, 76, 157, 174, 208  
Andromeda Galaxy 75, 234

## B

beliefs 2, 18, 50, 54, 55, 66, 68, 77, 93,  
96, 100, 122, 153, 154, 158, 168,  
196, 197, 213, 214, 215, 228, 232,  
233, 243  
Bible 12, 18, 19, 86, 91, 97, 98, 122,  
124, 151, 163, 189, 193, 202, 203,  
204, 226, 227, 228, 229, 233, 236,  
237, 238, 240  
Bishops 65  
blame 43, 78, 151  
born again 6, 48  
brutality vi, 9–14, 124, 125, 196, 197

## C

cancer 4, 13, 28, 71, 78, 98, 117, 161,  
174, 175, 178, 186, 208, 210, 219  
cannabis 219  
Castles 65  
**Cause vs. Choice, examples** 41  
chess 22, 64, 127, 128  
chess board 65, 66  
chess master 127  
chess player 127  
Christianity 4, 86, 87, 225  
Christians 4, 86, 90, 97, 152, 160, 164,  
203, 225, 227, 229, 230, 231, 242  
Common Law 179, 217, 216–19,  
220, 221  
communism 5, 67  
Communist Manifesto 226  
Crusades 86

cults 44, 48, 231, 232  
cumulative selection 129

## D

Death of Jim event 2  
Demon Pieces 65, 66, 68, 70  
disease v, vi, 76, 80, 82, 100, 118, 146,  
158, 176, 203, 209, 211  
diseases 2, 13, 59, 70, 78, 82, 98, 99,  
118, 153, 157, 159, 164, 174, 176,  
185, 186, 189, 203, 208, 209, 210,  
219, 239  
drama 7, 26, 27, 28, 30, 31–34, 35, 36,  
38, 41, 43, 44, 45, 51, 54, 127, 129,  
132, 195  
drug companies 98, 174, 186, 209  
Drug companies 184

## E

Easter Bunny 68, 100, 101, 160  
Einstein 9  
Energy 9, 15, 105, 200  
enlightenment v, 1, 3, 6, 7, 13, 77,  
90, 92–123, 124, 180, 195, 196, 197,  
198, 208, 222  
eternity 11, 15, 16, 52, 54, 55, 59, 61,  
73, 74, 106, 107, 108, 189, 231, 239  
evil 8, 12, 36, 62, 71, 76, 81, 82, 87, 99,  
117, 125, 126, 135, 136, 165, 186,  
191, 192, 193, 196, 239, 240  
evolution 107, 116, 119, 128, 133, 159,  
163, 167, 177, 228, 236, 237, 238

## F

FDA 70, 186  
Federal Reserve 180, 215  
free will 69, 80, 150–52, 200, 201, 206,  
230, 231, 235, 242

**G**

Galaxy 54, 75, 82, 94, 153, 198, 222, 234

Genesis 2 Church v, 82, 91, 157, 158, 209, 221

Gentle Revolution 157, 167

Glenn Doman 166–67

Global warming vi, 185

God 3, 4, 5, 8, 74–81, 11, 12, 15, 17, 19, 24, 25, 29, 38, 39, 52, 53, 59, 61, 62, 69, 70, 73–74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 85, 90, 91, 93, 103, 104–17, 120, 121, 124, 125, 126, 128, 150, 151, 153, 155, 156, 173, 192, 194, 195, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 211, 214, 221, 227, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 239, 240, 241, 242

God and suffering 188–91

God's mind 109

God's plan 12, 83, 227

God's viewpoints 115, 124, 191, 192

God's chosen people 240

God's laws 155

God's mind 60, 109, 110, 112, 113, 118, 237

God's plan 76, 77, 232, 233, 238–39

God's viewpoints 116

government vi, 62, 63, 79, 82, 91, 93, 98, 121, 135, 136, 197, 209, 214, 215, 216, 225, 227, 234

guilt 20, 23, 73, 75, 76, 77, 80, 81, 82, 89, 95, 140, 170, 192, 218, 241

**H**

Headache Meditation 142–43

heaven 3, 19, 46, 52, 53, 54, 86, 122, 128, 197, 204, 229, 230, 235, 237, 241

Hitler 5, 68, 120, 186

**I**

integrity 11, 12, 22, 23, 25, 28, 35, 36, 45, 48, 49, 50, 53, 54, 55, 56, 62, 63, 68, 70, 71, 82, 84, 87, 88, 124, 127, 128, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 153, 154, 155, 156, 162, 179, 192, 225, 242

intelligent evolution 163, 167

**J**

Jesus vii, 46, 47, 90, 96, 159, 196, 222, 228, 229

joy 22, 23, 28, 33, 49, 60, 62, 85, 115, 116, 120, 121, 122, 123, 195

**K**

Kings 66

Knights 65

Koran 226

**L**

love vi, 11, 23, 33, 83, 85–91, 96, 97, 125, 196, 200, 202, 204, 205

**M**

Magna Carta 217, 220

malaria 76, 83, 98, 104, 208

manifesting 5, 171, 172

Master Mineral Solution 157, 208, *See also* MMS

Matter 9, 15, 105, 200

meditation 20, 49, 99, 134, 135, 136, 148, 201

**meditation rituals** 137–42

MMS 70, 71, 82, 144, 157, 208–12

MMS2 210

money v, vi, 4, 5, 13, 45, 50, 53, 64, 65, 98, 103, 153, 155, 161, 170, 175, 177, 179, 181, 184, 185, 186, 192, 208, 210, 211

**Money and Debt** 180–87

Monsanto 185

murder vii, 5, 8, 13, 52, 62, 67, 90, 97,  
140, 161, 164, 226, 233  
Muslims 86, 90, 97, 232

## N

natural law 78, 104, 190, 216  
New Age 82  
New Age people 4, 5, 67  
New Age philosophies 38, 96  
Nirvana 46, 52, 53  
Nothing 105–8, 108, 110, 111, 188

## O

one-world government vi

## P

Pawns 62, 232  
peace 12, 67, 68, 70, 78, 82, 83, 85,  
86, 94, 97, 123, 191, 196, 197, 226,  
233, 243  
Pieces 62, 63, 64–72, 78, 79, 128, 154,  
232  
Player 25, 26, 28, 29, 30, 35, 38, 40,  
41, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 51, 52, 53, 54,  
57, 67, 127, 128, 129  
Players 28, 36, 37, 38, 40, 41, 42, 44,  
55, 59–63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70,  
71, 78, 82, 128, 154, 238  
poverty vi, 2, 76, 80, 82, 83, 92, 104  
Practical Enlightenment 1, 3, 6, 8,  
93, 94, 95, 99, 100, 104, 124–26,  
194

## Q

Queens 66

## R

religions 2, 4, 6, 7, 9, 10, 25, 38, 48, 52,  
54, 55, 75, 83, 85, 86, 90, 94, 95,  
115, 124, 137, 144, 152, 153, 156,  
164, 169, 192, 197, 199, 211, 225–  
43  
resistance 135, 136, 144, 167

rituals 137, 138, 141  
Rule 8 39, 40, 41, 42, 44, 46, 47, 61

## S

Santa Claus 68, 69, 100, 101, 160  
Santa Claus logic 80, 161  
Scientific Evolution 128  
Scientology 46, 48, 52  
slave 24, 44, 48, 74, 77, 78, 79, 81,  
196, 215, 222  
slavery 77, 240  
Space 9, 15, 105, 107, 200  
spirituality 9, 49, 66, 90, 120  
Stalin 68  
starvation vi, 8, 203  
stem cell research 121

## T

*The Master Mineral Solution of the 3<sup>rd</sup>  
Millennium* 144, 209  
*The Miracle Mineral Supplement of the  
21<sup>st</sup> Century* 208  
*The Story of Earth* 191  
The Truth Paragraph 5  
therapy 46  
Time 9, 15, 105, 109, 200  
Tooth Fairy 69, 100  
Touch Healing 144–48  
**Truth Paragraph** 3  
truth, searching for 3–6

## U

U.S. government 117, 162, 180, 181,  
213

## W

war 8, 28, 29, 62, 65, 66, 67, 78, 80, 97,  
164, 186, 192, 234  
war in Iraq 185  
wars 4, 13, 28, 52, 62, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68,  
69, 76, 86, 96, 153, 156, 168, 186,  
203, 226, 233, 242

winning 22, 23, 28, 35, 41, 130, 132,  
190

## **Z**

Zeitgeist 220

